

„Water table and organic substrate as triggers of  
greenhouse gas emissions from rewetted peatlands“

von der Naturwissenschaftlichen Fakultät  
der Gottfried Wilhelm Leibniz Universität Hannover

zur Erlangung des Grades  
Doktorin der Naturwissenschaften

Dr. rer. nat.

genehmigte Dissertation

von

Maria Hahn-Schöfl, Mag.rer.nat.

geboren am 01.04.1973 in Waidhofen a.d. Thaya (Österreich)

2015

Referent:	Prof. Dr. Gerald Kuhnt
Koreferent:	Prof. Dr. Jürgen Böttcher
Koreferentin:	Prof. Dr. Sabine Fiedler
beratende Stellungnahme:	Dr. Annette Freibauer
Tag der Promotion:	30.03.2015

---

## Acknowledgements

I wish to thank ...

Prof. Dr. Jürgen Böttcher for being my supervisor at the *Leibniz University Hannover*.

Dr. Annette Freibauer (*Thünen Institute of Climate-Smart Agriculture*) for the supervision of this work, for the advice and support she gave me during all the stages of this PhD – even over great distances.

all colleagues at the *Max Planck Institute for Biogeochemistry* in Jena – the scientific staff for fruitful discussions, – the technicians from the mechanical and electrical workshop groups, from the field experiments & instrumentation service group and from the building services for their assistance in device construction and in the experimental set-up, – the technicians from the analytical service groups for their support in gas and peat analysis, – the administrative staff for their every-day-help, and – the students for their help in gas flux measurements.

Dr. Angelika Thuille who took care of the incubation experiments at the *Max Planck Institute for Biogeochemistry* in Jena during the two periods of maternity leave.

the project partners within the project „*Climate mitigation via peatland management*” for providing information on the sampling sites, giving advice in technical aspects of gas flux measurements and calculations, modelling and the scientific discussions during our regular meetings.

the colleagues at the *Leibniz Centre for Agricultural Landscape Research* and the *Leibniz Institute for Freshwater Ecology and Inland Fisheries* for the excellent scientific collaboration and joint publication.

my parents who layed the foundation for my later life – an upbringing in the Austrian „Waldviertel“, an excellent education and endurance.

my two daughters, Anna Kristin and Katharina, who taught me patiance.

my husband Gerhard who supported me to finish what I began.

# Contents

Acknowledgements	i
Contents	ii
Summary	v
Zusammenfassung	vi
Chapter 1: Overall introduction	1
1.1. Peatlands: definition, area and importance	1
1.2. Societal context	2
1.2.1. Peatland use history	2
1.2.2. Peatlands in the context of climate change mitigation	3
1.3. Undisturbed peatlands	5
1.3.1. The crucial role of the water table position for GHG production and release	5
1.3.2. Organic matter quality and quantity and its effects on GHG production	7
1.3.3. Climatic relevance of natural peatlands	7
1.4. Drainage	8
1.4.1. Effect on peat characteristics	8
1.4.2. Effect on GHG fluxes and climate impact	9
1.5. Rewetting of peatlands	11
1.5.1. Effect on peat characteristics	11
1.5.2. Effect on GHG fluxes and climate impact	12
1.6. Motivation for performing incubation experiments and research questions	13
1.6.1. The effect of the organic substrate for CO <sub>2</sub> and CH <sub>4</sub> emissions	15
1.6.2. The effect of the water table on GHG fluxes: stepwise rewetting and prolonged flooding	16
1.6.3. The effect of the water table on GHG fluxes: alternating wet-dry conditions	17
1.7. Bibliography	18

---

Chapter 2: Publication I	24
Organic sediment formed during inundation of a degraded fen grassland emits large fluxes of CH <sub>4</sub> and CO <sub>2</sub>	
Abstract	25
1. Introduction	25
2. Materials and methods	26
3. Results	29
4. Discussion	32
5. Conclusions	34
References	35
Chapter 3: Publication II	37
Experimental rewetting of peat grasslands: critical water table thresholds for greenhouse gas emissions and vegetation responses	
Abstract	38
1. Introduction	38
2. Materials and methods	40
3. Results	46
4. Discussion	49
5. Conclusions	53
References	54
Tables and Figures	57
Appendix	66
Chapter 4: Publication III	80
High heterotrophic respiration but low methane and nitrous oxide emissions from peat grassland mesocosms under alternating wet-dry conditions	
Abstract	81
1. Introduction	81
2. Materials and methods	82
3. Results	85
4. Discussion	90
5. Conclusions	94
References	96
Tables and Figures	99
Appendix	112

---

Chapter 5: Comprehensive discussion and conclusions	114
5.1. Summary of results	114
5.1.1. The effect of the organic substrate for CO <sub>2</sub> and CH <sub>4</sub> emissions	114
5.1.2. The effect of the water table on GHG fluxes: stepwise rewetting and prolonged flooding	115
5.1.3. The effect of the water table on GHG fluxes: alternating wet-dry conditions	116
5.2. Implications for GHG mitigation by rewetting	118
5.3. Recommendation for rewetting	120
5.4. Bibliography	121
Glossary	122
List of Figures	127
List of Tables	129
Curriculum vitae	130

**Keywords:** greenhouse gases, peatland, rewetting

**Stichworte:** Treibhausgase, Moor, Wiedervernässung

## Summary

Peatlands are ecosystems comprising a huge carbon reservoir and play an essential role in the exchange of greenhouse gases ( $\text{CO}_2$ ,  $\text{CH}_4$  und  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ ) although they only cover  $\sim 3\%$  of the Earth's land area. Natural peatlands act as  $\text{CO}_2$  sinks and  $\text{CH}_4$  source – having a neutral net climate impact. Anthropogenic activities, such as drainage and cultivation, significantly modify the exchange of greenhouse gases – leading to an increased  $\text{CO}_2$  (and  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ ) release and low  $\text{CH}_4$  emissions – having a negative effect on the climate.

Since the reduction of anthropogenic greenhouse gas emissions via rewetting formerly drained peatlands may now be accounted for in the national greenhouse gas reporting under the Kyoto Protocol, rewetting programmes are increasingly being implemented in the context of climate mitigation. Under specific conditions, however,  $\text{CH}_4$  (or  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ ) emissions may be extremely high and can reduce the positive climate impact of rewetting measures. In order to develop effective rewetting and sustainable management measures, a better understanding of the processes and factors determining greenhouse gas fluxes is needed. Since there are several counteracting processes involved, we need to find a trade-off between  $\text{CO}_2$  and  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  reduction and simultaneous avoidance of high  $\text{CH}_4$  emissions.

Within the framework of this PhD thesis, four incubation experiments were performed to investigate the most important determinants of greenhouse gas emissions: organic substrate and water table. These laboratory experiments were performed with grassland mesocosms, which represent the most wide-spread land-use on organic soils in Germany. The experiments showed that:

- $\text{CO}_2$  release due to respiration immediately and considerably increased when lowering the water table. Therefore, intermittent dry phases – aiming to avoid high  $\text{CH}_4$  emissions – should be kept as short as possible as every wet day saves soil carbon.
- After rewetting,  $\text{CH}_4$  production started after a lag-phase until conditions favourable for methanogenesis were established. Aerenchymous plants stabilized the redox potential due to oxygen transport into deeper soil horizons, so that  $\text{CH}_4$  production occurred later. Intermittent drainage rapidly recovered the oxidative status of the peat and kept  $\text{CH}_4$  emissions very low.
- $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  emissions were of no importance in our investigations.
- The most positive climatic effect was achieved with a water table slightly below the peat surface – where  $\text{CO}_2$  production by respiration was limited, where  $\text{CH}_4$  production was still low and  $\text{CH}_4$  oxidation could occur in the shallow aerobic layer and where the grassland vegetation was still vital. Rewetting to a water table close to the peat surface increased net GHG uptake in terms of  $\text{CO}_2$ -equivalents, raising the water table above the peat surface (flooding) clearly reduced the positive climatic effect.
- The amount of readily degradable organic matter determined greenhouse gas production and not the quality of the old peat substrate. It is essential to keep the vegetation vital (i.e. to maintain productivity) and avoid its dying-off (i.e. to avoid the provision of additional readily degradable organic matter as substrate for microbial decomposition) – e.g. allowing for a vegetation transition towards wetness-adapted plant species in practical rewetting.

## Zusammenfassung

Moore sind Ökosysteme mit einem riesigen Vorrat an Kohlenstoff und spielen eine bedeutsame Rolle beim Austausch von Treibhausgasen ( $\text{CO}_2$ ,  $\text{CH}_4$  und  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ ) obwohl sie lediglich  $\sim 3\%$  der Landfläche unserer Erde einnehmen. Naturnahe Moore fungieren als  $\text{CO}_2$  Senke and  $\text{CH}_4$  Quelle – ihre Wirkung auf das Klima ist neutral. Anthropogene Aktivitäten, wie Entwässerung und Bewirtschaftung von Mooren, verändern den Austausch von Treibhausgasen maßgeblich – und führen zu erhöhter  $\text{CO}_2$  (und  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ ) Abgabe und verminderten  $\text{CH}_4$  Emissionen – sie haben eine negative Wirkung auf das Klima.

Da nun die Verminderung von anthropogenen Treibhausgasemissionen durch Wiedervernässung von ehemals entwässerten Mooren im Rahmen der nationalen Treibhausgasberichterstattung unter dem Kyotoprotokoll angerechnet werden kann, werden Wiedervernässungsprogramme mit dem Ziel Klimaschutz in zunehmendem Maße durchgeführt. Unter bestimmten Bedingungen jedoch können  $\text{CH}_4$  (oder  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ ) Emissionen extrem hoch sein und folglich die positive Klimawirkung von Wiedervernässungsmaßnahmen erheblich reduzieren. Um effektive Wiedervernässungs- und nachhaltige Managementmaßnahmen zu erarbeiten, ist ein besseres Verständnis jener Prozesse und Faktoren notwendig, die die Treibhausgasflüsse beeinflussen. Da mehrere entgegengesetzte Prozesse stattfinden, muss ein Mittelweg gefunden werden, um  $\text{CO}_2$  and  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  Emissionen zu reduzieren und gleichzeitig hohe  $\text{CH}_4$  Emissionen zu vermeiden.

Im Rahmen dieser Doktorarbeit wurden vier Inkubationsexperimente durchgeführt, die die wichtigsten Steuerfaktoren für die Emission von Treibhausgasen untersuchen: organisches Substrat und Wasserstand. Die Experimente wurden mit Grünland Mesokosmen durchgeführt, der häufigsten Landnutzungsform von organischen Böden in Deutschland.

Diese Laborexperimente haben gezeigt, dass:

- Die Abgabe von  $\text{CO}_2$  aus der Atmung stieg unmittelbar und erheblich an, wenn der Wasserstand abgesenkt wird. Daher sind zeitweise trockene Phasen – die hohe  $\text{CH}_4$  Emissionen vermeiden sollen – möglichst kurz zu halten. Jeder nasser Tag erhält gespeicherten Kohlenstoff.
- Die  $\text{CH}_4$  Bildung startete mit einer Verzögerung nach Wiedervernässung bis sich für die Methanogenese günstige Bedingungen eingestellt hatten. Aerenchympflanzen stabilisierten das Redoxpotential durch den Transport von Sauerstoff in tiefere Bodenhorizonte, sodaß die  $\text{CH}_4$  Bildung verzögert wurde. Zwischenzeitliche Drainage stellte den oxidativen Zustand des Torfes rasch wieder her und hielt  $\text{CH}_4$  Emissionen sehr niedrig.
- $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  Emissionen spielten in unseren Untersuchungen keine Rolle.
- Die positivste Wirkung auf das Klima wurde durch einen Wasserstand leicht unterhalb der Torfoberfläche erreicht – wo die  $\text{CO}_2$  Bildung durch die Atmung eingeschränkt war, wo die Bildung von  $\text{CH}_4$  noch gering war und  $\text{CH}_4$  Oxidation in der oberflächennahen aeroben Schicht stattfinden konnte und wo die Grünlandvegetation noch vital blieb. Die Wiedervernässung mit einem Wasserstand nahe der Torfoberfläche erhöhte die Aufnahme von Treibhausgasen (ausgedrückt in  $\text{CO}_2$ -Äquivalente), ein Anheben des Wasserstandes über die Torfoberfläche (Überflutung) reduzierte deutlich den positiven Klimaeffekt.

- Die Menge an leicht abbaubarem organischen Material bestimmte die Treibhausgasbildung und nicht die Qualität des alten Torfsubstrates. Es ist wesentlich, die Vegetation in einem vitalen Zustand zu halten (d.h. die Produktivität zu erhalten) und ein Absterben zu verhindern (d.h. die Zufuhr von leicht abbaubarem organischen Material als Substrat für mikrobiellen Abbau zu vermeiden). Dies kann beispielsweise bei Wiedervernässungsmaßnahmen erreicht werden, indem man einen Übergang zu Pflanzenarten erlaubt, die an nasse Bedingungen angepasst sind.

## Chapter 1: Overall introduction

### 1.1. Peatlands: definition, area and importance

A peatland is an area with a naturally accumulated peat layer at the surface (Joosten 2010a). Peatlands have been defined by their soil type or by their vegetation cover (Ramsar 1971). While the definition by vegetation type is restricted to the presence of peat forming species, the definition by soil type is wide enough to include the managed, drained and degraded peat forms.

Organic soils are defined by their organic matter content together with a depth criterion. The German soil classification system (Ad-Hoc-AG Boden 2005) defines peat as organic soils which have > 30 % organic matter and an organic horizon  $\geq$  30 cm. The minimum peat depth of 30 cm is historically based on the ploughing depth (Joosten 2010a). The *World Reference Base for Soils* (WRB IUSS Working Group 2006) lists histosols as soils with an organic layer > 40 cm formed from organic material and with a carbon content between 20 to 30 %. In contrast, the IPCC definition of organic soils is broader and includes shallow peat soils with an organic horizon of  $\geq$ 10 cm and strongly degraded peat soils with a carbon content  $\geq$ 12 % (IPCC 2006) – and assumes that they also behave like real peat soils regarding GHG (greenhouse gas) fluxes (Leiber-Sauheitl et al. 2014).

In this thesis, the peat soils studied fall under the histosol definition of the German soil classification system (Ad-Hoc-AG Boden 2005) and the *World Reference Base for Soils* (WRB IUSS Working Group 2006).

Peatlands are ecosystems in which carbon (C) has been accumulated on the long term as more carbon is fixed through photosynthesis than released through respiration. Therefore, peatlands are a long-term sink for atmospheric carbon dioxide (CO<sub>2</sub>) (Gorham 1991; Roulet et al. 2007). Peat forms under wetland conditions, where waterlogging causes oxygen deficiency and organic matter accumulates because decomposition is slowed down and incomplete (Kasimir-Klemetsson et al. 1997). Peat usually accumulates slowly, at the rate of about a millimetre per year (Keddy 2010).

Peatlands can be classified in terms of their source of water and nutrients into bogs and fens. Bogs are situated higher than the surrounding landscape on a dome-shaped landform and obtain most of their water from rainfall (i.e. are ombrotrophic). Fens are located on slopes, flats, or depressions and get their water from both rainfall as well as surface water – they are known as minerotrophic.

Peatlands provide many ecosystem services including biodiversity, agricultural products, forestry, water resources, flood water retention, recreation, archaeological resource and – the most recently considered – carbon sequestration (Lunt et al. 2010).

Worldwide, peatlands cover  $\sim$ 3 % of the total land area (e.g. (Joosten and Couwenberg 2009). Most peatlands are found in the northern hemisphere (87.5 %) and only 10-12 % in tropical regions (IPS 2008). The carbon accumulated in peatlands corresponds to almost half of the total atmospheric carbon stock (Houghton et al. 1990). They are important carbon stores, representing up to one third (between 250 and 450 Pg; 1 Pg = 1Gt = 10<sup>15</sup>g) of the World's terrestrial carbon pool (Gorham 1991). But peatlands also influence the global climate via the atmospheric CH<sub>4</sub> budget – they are considered to be the largest single source of atmospheric CH<sub>4</sub> also when considering all natural and anthropogenic emissions.

On the European continent, peatlands cover 5–6 % of the land surface (ca. 515,000 km<sup>2</sup>) (Drösler et al. 2008) and are concentrated in northern and temperate regions.

In Germany, 3.8 to 5.1 % of the land area is peatlands – depending on the source (Drösler et al. 2011b). Recently gathered information reveals that 16,668 km<sup>2</sup> of the German land area are peatlands (status of 2008; International Mire Conservation Group Global Peatland Database (IMCG-GPD) (Joosten 2010a) which corresponds to 4.67 % of the total land area.

## 1.2. Societal context

### 1.2.1. Peatland use history

Peatlands have long been perceived as wild, dangerous and hostile environments for humans. In temperate regions, making use of peatlands by peat extraction or cultivation was expensive and hard for the first generations and often done as public effort (e.g. colonization of Dutch in N-Germany, „Emslandplan“ in the 1960`s, etc.).

In Europe, peat was used early as litter, for soil improvement and in balneology. Since the bronze age, peat has traditionally been extracted for energy supply. It even became essential as fuel in parts of Germany due to shortage of firewood, e.g. during the 18<sup>th</sup> until the beginning of the 20<sup>th</sup> century (Succow 2001a). Nowadays, peat is not extracted any more for energy production in Central Europe, but it is still important in Ireland, North- and Eastern Europe and Russia (Joosten and Couwenberg 2001).

For several hundreds of years peatlands were used in an extensive manner. Since the Middle Ages, peatlands were used as pastures. The more intensive agricultural use started at the end of the 19<sup>th</sup> century. Although peatlands were systematically drained during the first World War these agricultural areas were still extensively used. In Central Europe, it was only in the period between the 1950`s and the 1980`s that the agricultural use was profoundly intensified and extended to the major part of peatland areas (Succow 2001b).

During the last decades, the use and destruction of peatlands in South East Asia became more prominent in the public perception. These peatlands are being deforested, usually accompanied by some form of drainage, and subjected to agricultural use and other forms of land conversion (Hooijer et al. 2012). Major concerns here are land subsidence, leading to damage on infrastructure, and peat fires which easily break out on degraded peat soils and which set free large amounts of carbon (Page et al. 2002; Page et al. 2010). In recent years, carbon losses from drained SE Asian peatlands have been found to contribute substantially to global GHG emissions (Hooijer et al. 2012).

The drainage of peatlands not only leads to ecological consequences – such as degradation of peatlands and carbon losses, loss of biodiversity, nutrient fluxes leading to environmental pollution – but also to economic and social consequences (Succow 2001b).

In Central Europe, the use of peatlands is diminishing due to the socio-economic changes since the 1990`s and ongoing soil degradation (Couwenberg et al. 2008). In some areas, where peatland use has proven unsuccessful, peatlands are being rewetted.

## 1.2.2. Peatlands in the context of climate change mitigation

More than 30 % of the total global anthropogenic GHG emissions are estimated to originate from the land use sector (Agriculture, Forestry and Other Land Use (AFOLU)) (IPCC 2007a) – a quarter of those are released via peatland fires and degradation of drained peat soils (Couwenberg 2009a).

While globally, drainage and cultivation of peatlands is going on, in particular in South East Asia (Page et al. 2010), the value of peatlands as a carbon reservoir (Gorham 1991; Ramsar 2002) and their role in global climate regulation (Joosten 2010b; Tanneberger and Wichtmann 2011) has been recognized.

After years of international debate, peatland rewetting is now eligible as voluntary activity for reducing GHG emissions in the framework of international commitments, e.g. under the *Kyoto Protocol*, the *REDD+<sup>1</sup>* mechanism or the *EU LULUCF decision<sup>2</sup>*. Rewetting reduces CO<sub>2</sub> and nitrous oxide (N<sub>2</sub>O) emissions but reinstates methane (CH<sub>4</sub>) emissions that then are defined as anthropogenic and thus must be reported and accounted (Couwenberg 2009a).

Thus, rewetting programmes for degraded peatlands present a new challenge and may be implemented by using the opportunity for climate change mitigation (Joosten 2010b). Challenging rewetting programmes are already being implemented with the explicit goal of reducing GHG emissions (Couwenberg et al. 2008), e.g. in Germany, Poland and Belarus<sup>3</sup>.

On the global scale, peatland rewetting is expected to reduce GHG emissions in the order of several hundred Mio t CO<sub>2</sub> equivalents per year (Joosten 2010a). For Germany, the hypothetical potential for emission reduction via a climatic friendly management of peatlands – extensive management and rewetting – is estimated to about 35 Mio t CO<sub>2</sub> equivalents per year, respectively 76 % of the actual emissions (Freibauer et al. 2009).

### *International conventions for climate change mitigation*

The role of peatlands in carbon storage and sequestration and their importance for climate change has been discussed since the 1990s by various international conventions and stakeholders<sup>4</sup> before it was brought to the agenda of the Climate Convention (see UNFCCC below) in 2006 (Joosten 2011a). Large emissions from peatland conversion and fires in SE Asia emphasized the problems of peatland destruction on the global scale.

The *United Nations Framework Convention on Climate Change* (UNFCCC) is an international environmental treaty with the objective to prevent dangerous anthropogenic interference of the climate system. In 1997, the *Kyoto Protocol* to the UNFCCC was adopted which sets binding obligations on industrialized countries (Annex I parties of the UNFCCC) to reduce GHG emissions.

Under the *Kyoto Protocol*, countries are obliged to report on their anthropogenic GHG (greenhouse

---

1 Reducing Emissions from Deforestation and Forest Degradation

2 Decision No 529/2013/EU of the European Parliament and of the Council of 21 May 2013 on accounting rules on greenhouse gas emissions and removals resulting from activities relating to land use, land-use change and forestry and on information concerning actions relating to those activities. L 165/80 Official Journal of the European Union 18.6.2013

3 Large-scale rewetting projects are performed in Belarus – where 14 % of the land area are peatlands – and within which funds should be raised through selling high quality carbon credits on the voluntary market. One of these initiatives is the three-year project “Restoring peatlands and applying concepts for sustainable management in Belarus – climate change mitigation with economic and biodiversity benefits” (for details see (Tanneberger and Wichtmann 2011).

4 e.g. the *Ramsar Convention on Wetlands of International Importance*, the *Convention on Biological Diversity* (CBD), the *Intergovernmental Panel for Climate Change* (IPCC), and global peatland stakeholder groups

gas) emissions including some of the GHG emissions from peatlands. The aim of reporting emissions is to monitor the progress of agreed national emission reduction targets<sup>5</sup>. In the *first commitment period* under the *Kyoto Protocol* (2008-2012), only N<sub>2</sub>O emissions from „cultivated Histosols“ (i.e. peatlands drained for cropland and grasslands under agriculture) and CO<sub>2</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions from drained peatlands under forestry (if the activity „Forest Management“ has been elected) were included. In contrast, a more comprehensive inclusion of anthropogenic GHG emissions from wetland drainage and rewetting is allowed in the *second commitment period* under the *Kyoto Protocol* (2013-2020).

In addition, the *Kyoto Protocol* includes a mechanism for „carbon trading“ – the opportunity to offset a country’s emissions by acquiring the reduced emissions of another country (Joosten 2011b).

The 2006 *Guidelines for National Greenhouse Gas Inventories* provide the methodology for calculating and reporting national GHG emissions and removals. The *2013 IPCC Kyoto Protocol Supplement*<sup>6</sup> includes guidance on methodologies on how to implement the activity „Wetlands Drainage and Rewetting“, which „is a system of practices for draining and rewetting on land with organic soil that covers a minimum area of 1 hectare. It applies to all lands that have been drained since 1990 and to all lands that have been rewetted since 1990 and that are not accounted for under any other activity. Drainage is defined as the direct human-induced lowering of the soil water table and rewetting is the direct human-induced partial or total reversal of drainage“ (IPCC 2014).

In order to fill the gaps related to peatland rewetting in the 2006 *Guidelines for National Greenhouse Gas Inventories*, the *Wetlands Supplement*<sup>7</sup> has been developed and accepted in 2013 and provides guidance on methodologies on how to estimate GHG emissions from drained and rewetted wetlands.

Under some conditions, voluntary activities for reducing GHG emissions can be accounted for under the REDD+<sup>8</sup> mechanism which is still under discussion by the *United Nations Framework Convention on Climate Change* (UNFCCC). The objectives of REDD+ are climate mitigation by reducing GHG emissions and the removal of GHG through enhanced forest management in developing countries.

In parallel to the global negotiations, the EU has issued the *LULUCF decision*<sup>9</sup>, making reporting of CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emissions from cropland and grazing land mandatory from 2013 onwards, although these emissions do not count for any quantitative emission reduction targets. This includes emissions from peatlands drained for agriculture.

---

5 reduced emissions compared to the reference year 1990

6 activity „Wetlands Drainage and Rewetting“ decided under Decision 2/CMP.7 (Land use, land-use change and forestry) contained in document FCCC/KP/CMP/2011/10/Add.1

7 The 2013 Supplement to the 2006 IPCC Guidelines for National Greenhouse Gas Inventories: Wetlands (<http://www.ipcc-nggip.iges.or.jp/public/wetlands/background.html>)

8 Reducing Emissions from Deforestation and Forest Degradation

9 Decision No 529/2013/EU of the European Parliament and of the Council of 21 May 2013 on accounting rules on greenhouse gas emissions and removals resulting from activities relating to land use, land-use change and forestry and on information concerning actions relating to those activities. L 165/80 Official Journal of the European Union 18.6.2013

## 1.3. Undisturbed peatlands

### 1.3.1. The crucial role of the water table position for GHG production and release

Natural peatlands are characterized by a high water table position. The mean annual water table is close to the soil surface with seasonal fluctuations (IPCC 2014) due to a net surplus of water and the effect of the specific vegetation types together with the peat characteristics. Peat bodies consist classically of two layers:

- the acrotelm: a relatively shallow surface layer with a fluctuating water table where aerobic conditions occur; and
- the catotelm: a layer located below the mean water table with anaerobic conditions created by the consumption of oxygen. Anaerobic conditions lead to reduced mineralization and allow the accumulation of organic material.

Thus, the position of the water table determines the thickness of the aerobic and the anaerobic zone in the peat profile (Fig. 1-1) and has the strongest effect on GHG exchange (Augustin 2001). The thickness of the upper aerobic zone is crucial as respiration processes are much more faster under aerobic conditions and methane is oxidized in this upper aerobic zone. A high water table position entails moderate net CO<sub>2</sub> fixation, moderate to high CH<sub>4</sub> emissions and very low N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (Augustin 2001). In undisturbed peatlands, the layer with aerobic conditions is usually shallow (Drösler et al. 2008).

The gaseous exchange between the atmosphere and the peat surface (Fig. 1-1) is dominated by the photosynthetic fixation of CO<sub>2</sub> (GPP, gross primary production) and by heterotrophic and autotrophic respiration losses (R<sub>eco</sub>, ecosystem respiration). The balance between these is known as the net ecosystem exchange (NEE) of CO<sub>2</sub>. Respiration processes are an order of magnitude faster under aerobic conditions than under anaerobic conditions (Drösler et al. 2008) as anaerobic degradation provides less energy than aerobic degradation (Koppisch 2001).

CH<sub>4</sub> flux is the result of methane production in the lower anaerobic peat layer and methane oxidation in the near-surface aerobic layer or in the oxic zones of the rhizosphere (see Fig. 1-1). Methane is one of the end products of anaerobic decomposition. Organic matter (e.g. plant litter, root exudates, peat) is rapidly degraded by non-methanogenic microorganisms into low molecular compounds (such as H<sub>2</sub>/CO<sub>2</sub> and acetate) that are further reduced by methanogens into methane (Augustin et al. 2011). First of all, anaerobic conditions have to be established, thereafter, the availability of fresh organic matter is the main determinant for CH<sub>4</sub> formation (Couwenberg 2009a). Aerenchymous plants (“shunt” species) affect the CH<sub>4</sub> flux as they enable the transport of O<sub>2</sub> into anaerobic peat horizons where methane is re-oxidized in the oxygenated zone surrounding plant roots (Couwenberg 2009a). They also allow methane transport from deeper peat horizons to the surface by-passing CH<sub>4</sub> oxidation in aerobic layers (“chimney-effect”) (Augustin 2001).

Methane production is spatially very variable (Worrall et al. 2010). A literature review of field GHG measurements in temperate European peatlands shows that net CH<sub>4</sub> emissions were negligible at mean annual water table < -20 cm and steeply increased with rising water table (Couwenberg et al. 2008).

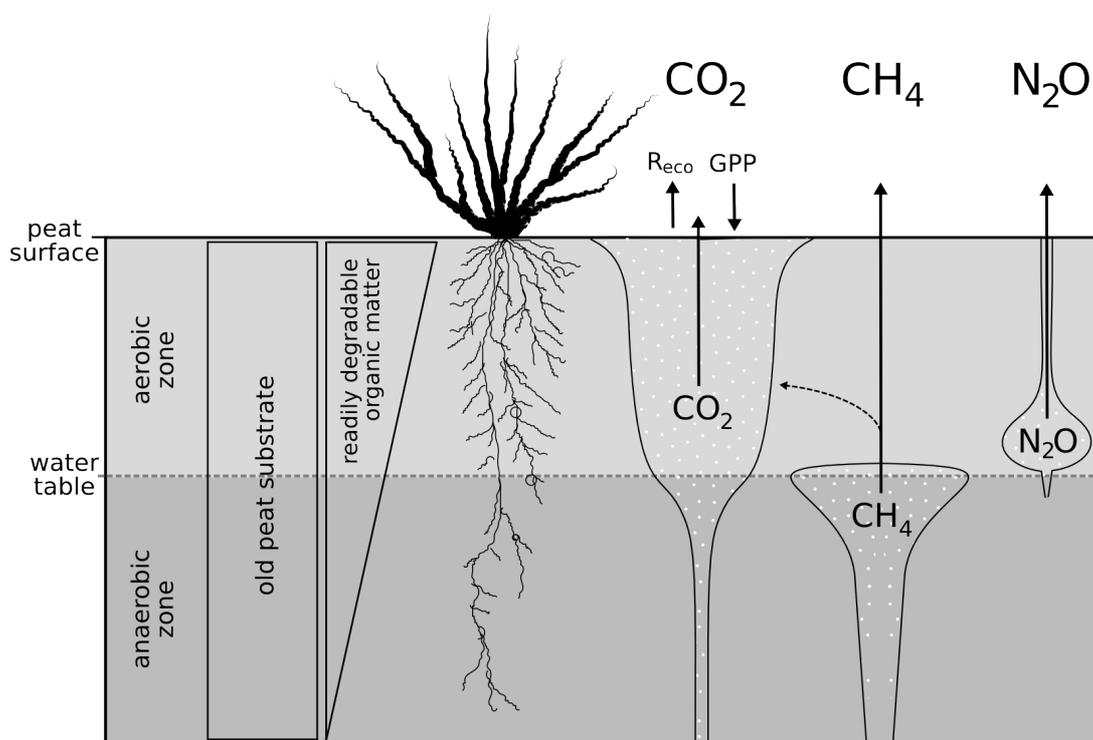


Fig. 1-1: Schematic illustration of a peat profile showing the two determining factors water table and organic matter (left) for microbial production of the greenhouse gases  $\text{CO}_2$ ,  $\text{CH}_4$  and  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  (right). The water table position determines the thickness of the aerobic and the anaerobic zone. Organic matter consists of the old peat substrate (i.e. recalcitrant carbon compounds more resistant to decomposition) and readily degradable organic matter (e.g. from plant litter, root exudates, etc.). The exchange of  $\text{CO}_2$  on the peat surface is determined by the two opposing processes ecosystem respiration ( $R_{\text{eco}}$ , release of  $\text{CO}_2$  into the atmosphere) and gross primary production (GPP, fixation of  $\text{CO}_2$  via photosynthesis). Gas transport can take place via diffusion, ebullition and plant mediated transport (arrows). Methane may be consumed in the aerobic zone (dashed arrow) or in the oxic zones of the rhizosphere by methane oxidizing microorganisms.

$\text{N}_2\text{O}$  flux is the result of production and consumption processes by nitrifying and denitrifying bacteria. Nitrification mainly depends on  $\text{NH}_4^+$  and  $\text{O}_2$  availability, while denitrification is generally controlled by  $\text{O}_2$ , N-oxides and a suitable reductant which is commonly organic carbon (Firestone and Davidson 1989). The soil water content is the dominant environmental controller as it controls gas transport within the soil (Firestone and Davidson 1989; Davidson et al. 2000).  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  is produced under sub-oxic conditions (Fig. 1-1) (Kasimir-Klemedtsson et al. 1997) which occur e.g. in the capillary fringe. In water-saturated (anaerobic) soils, much of the  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  is further reduced to  $\text{N}_2$  by denitrifiers (Davidson et al. 2000). Abrupt changes in soil moisture (e.g. a drastic rise of the groundwater table or strong rainfalls) are considered important for trace N-gas fluxes as they change the controlling factors for nitrification and denitrification (Firestone and Davidson 1989).  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  production only occurs when ammonium or nitrate are available, e.g. via peat mineralization,

fertilization or N-deposition (Augustin et al. 2011). Natural peatlands usually have a low potential for N<sub>2</sub>O emissions due to their N-poor conditions and, therefore, N<sub>2</sub>O emissions are often not considered in GHG balance studies (Beetz et al. 2013).

### **1.3.2. Organic matter quality and quantity and its effects on GHG production**

Besides the water level, the quality and quantity of organic matter plays an important role in potential GHG production (Fig. 1-1). It is the presence and amount of fresh, readily decomposable organic matter that determines the magnitude of GHG emissions (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2011). This is supported by the observation that CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> production rates are generally greatest in the surface peat (e.g. (Glatzel et al. 2004; Reiche et al. 2010; Estop-Aragonés and Blodau 2012) as the availability of organic matter decreases with depth (Segers 1998). The old peat plays only a subordinate role as a substrate for GHG production (Couwenberg 2009a; Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2011) and, consequently, the quality of the bulk peat substrate itself is of minor importance.

The decomposability of the organic material is crucial for CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> formation and often chemical peat characteristics, nutrient availability, aromaticity (Smolders et al. 2002; Frank et al. 2014) or thermal stability (Reiche et al. 2010) are used to indicate organic matter quality. However, there is currently no common definition of organic matter quality (Reiche et al. 2010).

### **1.3.3. Climatic relevance of natural peatlands**

Within the context of this thesis, we use the atmosphere as reference point: negative gas fluxes mean a removal from the atmosphere and incorporation into the soil and plant (decreasing the atmospheric concentration), positive values indicate gas fluxes from the soil to the atmosphere (increasing the atmospheric concentration).

The impact of peatlands to radiative forcing is twofold. Most natural northern peatlands sequester carbon by accumulating peat – which lowers the atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> burden – but simultaneously emit CH<sub>4</sub> – increasing the atmospheric CH<sub>4</sub> burden (Frolking et al. 2006). The climatic relevance of peatlands can be assessed depending on the purpose and with regard to different time scales.

On the long term, the carbon balance is the key factor which reflects the functional role of peat growth. The long-term carbon balance (Long-term average carbon uptake rates (LORCA)) is determined as a function of the total mass accumulated and the age of the peat deposit. In northern peatlands, the average long-term carbon uptake is around 25 g C m<sup>-2</sup> yr<sup>-1</sup> (Drösler et al. 2008). The longer the time horizon the less important is the radiative forcing of CH<sub>4</sub>. Methane has a relatively short lifetime. In contrast to CO<sub>2</sub>, a CH<sub>4</sub> pulse input is almost completely removed from the atmosphere within several decades and the atmosphere comes into approximate equilibrium with a new constant CH<sub>4</sub> source or sink (Frolking et al. 2006).

The short-term GHG exchange is important with regard to the anthropogenic activities in peatlands having an impact on climate change (Drösler et al. 2008). In order to assess the relative climate impacts of anthropogenic GHG emissions and to compare the climate impacts of different GHGs, the Global Warming Potential (GWP) methodology was adopted (Frolking et al. 2006). The radiative forcing of a site is determined by CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes together accounting for their individual global warming potential relative to CO<sub>2</sub> for a 100-year time horizon (IPCC 2007b). In order to assess and compare the climate impact of different peatlands, the GWP methodology is

based on the annual GHG flux rates (Frolking et al. 2006), e.g. as done first for various European peatlands by (Drösler et al. 2008). A negative GWP means that a peatland site is a GHG sink (having a „cooling effect“ on the climate), a positive GWP value indicates a peatland as a GHG source („warming effect“). Within the context of this PhD thesis, the short-term GHG exchange is assessed by using the GWP methodology – however, based on GHG flux rates over a defined period and not on annual flux rates.

Within the *Kyoto Protocol*, the GWP methodology provides a mechanism for „trading“ among gases. The GWP methodology is a policy tool to evaluate the climate impact of GHG pulses but it does not assess the impact of sustained or variable GHG emissions on radiative forcing at any given time (Frolking et al. 2006).

Natural European peatlands are close to climate neutral (Drösler et al. 2008). They generally take up CO<sub>2</sub>, release part of the accumulated carbon as CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> due to microbial decomposition processes and are neutral with respect to N<sub>2</sub>O (see natural state in Fig. 1-2). However, GHG fluxes from peatlands are very variable in space and time.

## 1.4. Drainage

Peatlands have been subjected to land use – which is usually associated with draining – for many centuries: for use in agriculture, forestry, and peat extraction. Drainage is the „artificial (human-induced) lowering of the soil water table to levels which are at least temporarily below natural levels, i.e. below the soil surface, but can experience seasonal fluctuations“ (IPCC 2014).

Worldwide, 500,000 km<sup>2</sup> (of the total 4 million km<sup>2</sup> peatland area) are degraded (Joosten 2010a). Approximately 60 % of European natural peatlands have been destroyed due to anthropogenic activities – such as agriculture (50 %), forestry (30 %) and peat extraction (10 %) – so that only a small area of living, peat-accumulating peatlands still exists (Joosten and Couwenberg 2001). In Germany, the major part of peatlands (71 %) has been drained for use in agriculture – mainly as cropland (31%) and grassland (40 %). Germany turns out as the second largest emitter in Europe despite its relatively small peatland area. The reason for this fact is the intensive use of most of the peatland area as cropland and grassland with intensive drainage (Drösler et al. 2008).

### 1.4.1. Effect on peat characteristics

Long-term drainage and agricultural use of peatlands cause irreversible chemical, physical and biological changes in peat characteristics (Grønlund et al. 2006).

Drainage leads to an irreversible lowering of the surface (subsidence) (Kasimir-Klemedtsson et al. 1997; Joosten 2010a; Hooijer et al. 2012) which is caused by two different processes: biological oxidation – resulting in carbon loss – and physical volume reduction which is caused by compaction, shrinkage and consolidation (Hooijer et al. 2012). Subsidence occurs in the first years mainly due to consolidation and later due to compaction and peat mineralization (Höper 2007; Hooijer et al. 2012). In the first few years after drainage, carbon loss rates are substantially higher as a finite pool of the most labile carbon compounds decomposes rapidly leaving only recalcitrant carbon compounds that are more resistant to decomposition (Hooijer et al. 2012).

Furthermore, drainage leads to internal eutrophication of the peat soils (Stegmann and Zeitz 2001; Zak et al. 2010). A reduction of macroporosity, increased bulk density and ash content, and reduced

permeability to air and water are also effects from draining (Kasimir-Klemedtsson et al. 1997; Grønlund et al. 2008).

The water content and the water conductivity of the peat are reduced and the amplitude between summer and winter groundwater level is increased (Drösler 2005; Hooijer et al. 2012). In case of agricultural use, ploughing leads to aeration and better incorporation of fertilizer and boosts peat mineralization (Kasimir-Klemedtsson et al. 1997; Freibauer et al. 2004; Grønlund et al. 2006).

### 1.4.2. Effect on GHG fluxes and climate impact

Drainage can significantly alter carbon cycling within peatlands (e.g. (Roulet et al. 2007) such that peatlands can become a large and persistent source of CO<sub>2</sub> to the atmosphere (see Fig. 1-2) (e.g. (Waddington et al. 2002; Couwenberg et al. 2008; Joosten 2010a), dissolved organic carbon (DOC) to aquatic ecosystems (e.g. (Limpens et al. 2008; Zak et al. 2010) and particulate organic carbon (Estop-Aragonés and Blodau 2012). As the enormous peat carbon pool is gradually but continuously tapped GHG emissions last for many decades (Joosten and Couwenberg 2009).

Various factors are given which may control CO<sub>2</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions from agriculturally used organic soils, such as peat structure, C:N ratio, drainage depth, cultivation practice and climate (e.g. (Kasimir-Klemedtsson et al. 1997). The location of the groundwater table has the largest influence on GHG emissions from peatlands (Augustin 2001). Lowering the groundwater table results – due to aeration – in extremely high net CO<sub>2</sub> release and moderate to high N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (Fig. 1-2) (Kasimir-Klemedtsson et al. 1997; Augustin 2001). CH<sub>4</sub> emissions cease as the aerobic zone is enlarged through drainage, increasing methane oxidation (Fig. 1-2). Maximum mineralization rates are observed at groundwater levels of 60 to 90 cm (Höper 2007).

Peatland drainage may also cause substantial emissions of N<sub>2</sub>O (Fig. 1-2) (Joosten 2010a) which mainly depend on the groundwater level and fertilizer N application (Kasimir-Klemedtsson et al. 1997; Flessa et al. 1998). Fertilized peatlands have a higher potential for N<sub>2</sub>O emissions because of enriched N-pools compared to natural peatlands (Beetz et al. 2013). Perturbations in the soil, e.g. drying/wetting or freezing/thawing, affect substrate availability and cause seasonal fluctuations in N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (Kasimir-Klemedtsson et al. 1997; Flessa et al. 1998). N<sub>2</sub>O emissions have high spatial and temporal variability and should be seen with caution (Kasimir-Klemedtsson et al. 1997).

In the literature, situations when high N<sub>2</sub>O emissions can be expected are diverse: The risk for N<sub>2</sub>O emissions is highest in nutrient-rich fens with highly variable water table and a mean annual groundwater table of -50 cm (Drösler et al. 2011b). The highest N<sub>2</sub>O flux was observed at intermediate soil moisture content (Kasimir-Klemedtsson et al. 1997) (Joosten and Couwenberg 2009) state that N<sub>2</sub>O is in general emitted at water levels below -20 cm.

Summarizing, lowering the water level in peatlands differently affects the three GHGs – it leads to an increase in net CO<sub>2</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O release and a decrease in CH<sub>4</sub> emissions. Considering all three GHGs together, managed peatlands are significant sources of GHGs (Drösler et al. 2008).

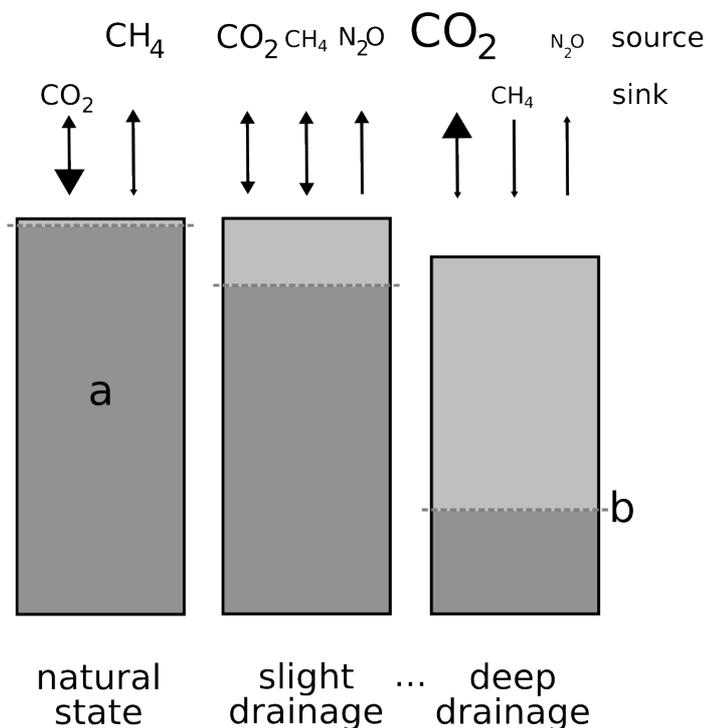


Fig. 1-2: Peatlands in their natural state and under drainage: Direction and relative amount of GHG fluxes (CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O) from peat surface (the arrows indicate the direction of the gas flux, the arrow and font size exhibits the relative amount emitted or taken up); a) peat profile with aerobic (light grey) and anaerobic layer (dark grey), b) position of the water table). (The figure was amended based on those presented in (Drösler et al. 2008)).

On the global scale, the amount of CO<sub>2</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O released by peatland drainage corresponds to 2-3 Gt CO<sub>2</sub> equivalents per year (Couwenberg 2009b).

Global CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from drained peatlands<sup>10</sup> have strongly increased from 1,058 Mio t in 1990 to 1,298 Mio t in 2008 – this is equivalent to an increase of > 20 % of the 1990 emissions (Joosten 2010a). After Southeast Asia, temperate Europe (EU-27) is the World's second largest emitter of CO<sub>2</sub> from drained peatlands (Joosten and Couwenberg 2009). However, emissions have decreased from 191<sup>11</sup> (in 1990) to 174 Mio t (in 2008) which corresponds to a decrease of ~10% since 1990 (Joosten 2010a).

Drained peatlands represent the largest GHG source in Germany outside the energy sector emitting 5 % of the total German GHG emissions (Umweltbundesamt 2013). This corresponds to 46.0 Mio t CO<sub>2</sub> equivalents per year<sup>12</sup>. So despite its relatively small peatland area, Germany is the second largest emitter of GHGs from peatlands in the European Union because the majority of the peatland area is drained (Drösler et al. 2008).

80 % of German GHG emissions from peatlands originate from fens (Höper 2007) and the

<sup>10</sup> CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from peat extraction and fires are excluded

<sup>11</sup> CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from peat extraction and fires are excluded

<sup>12</sup> all land use types considered including peat extraction

remainder from bogs. In 2011, 60 % of GHG emissions emerged from croplands, 29 % from grasslands, about 5% from settlements, about 5% from peat extraction, and 1.5 % from forestry (Umweltbundesamt 2013). In 2011, drained German peatlands used as cropland and grassland emitted about 25,000 and 11,000 Gg CO<sub>2</sub>, respectively, corresponding to approximately 2.7 % and 1.2 % of total anthropogenic CO<sub>2</sub> emissions in Germany (Umweltbundesamt 2013).

## 1.5. Rewetting of peatlands

Peatland restoration can have different objectives – e.g. re-vegetation, vegetation management, water management (Lunt et al. 2010), conservation of carbon stocks or climate change mitigation (Worrall et al. 2010). In the literature, the term “peatland restoration” is ambiguous as it is defined in different ways depending on the context.

As we focus our work on climate change mitigation, we refer to the definition by the recently adopted *IPCC Wetlands Supplement*: “Wetland restoration aims to permanently re-establish the pre-disturbance wetland ecosystem, including the hydrological and biogeochemical processes typical of water saturated soils, as well as the vegetation cover that pre-dated the disturbance. Normally, the restoration of previously drained wetlands is accompanied by rewetting“ (IPCC 2014).

For the assessment of GHG emissions – as done within the framework of this thesis – the term “rewetting” is of importance and the definition given by the IPCC is used: “Rewetting is the deliberate action of raising the water table on drained soils to re-establish water saturated conditions and is accomplished by e.g. blocking drainage ditches or disabling pumping facilities. Rewetting can have several objectives, such as wetland restoration or allowing other management practices on saturated organic soils such as paludiculture. The position of the water table is a major control of the biogeochemical processes responsible for GHG fluxes from wetlands” (IPCC 2014).

„Natural“ water levels are closer to the peat surface and show less seasonal fluctuation (Lunt et al. 2010). In practice it is often difficult to establish and maintain the water table at a certain level, so that the water table may be below (partial rewetting) or above an optimum level (permanent flooding).

Peatland restoration represents a new development due to peatland conservation programs. Most peatland restoration measures have happened after peat extraction or on near-natural sites. There is little experience with restoration of deeply drained, fertilized agricultural sites, where the GHG emission reduction per area is highest.

Peatland restoration is an emerging area of GHG research (Drösler et al. 2008). Studies so far have focused on the effect of rewetting on GHGs. While there is a constant growth of annual carbon and GHG observations in the literature, few studies have considered the full GHG budget of CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O. A clear functional relationship between GHG emissions and important physical, chemical and biological drivers is still missing. This makes estimates of GHG emission reductions by peatland restoration projects highly uncertain. The absence of long-term monitoring data is a major problem and limits our knowledge about the success of peatland restoration (Lunt et al. 2010).

### 1.5.1. Effect on peat characteristics

Rewetting leads to fundamental changes in site characteristics in a transient and dynamic way which are currently inadequately studied (Couwenberg et al. 2008).

In case the swelling and shrinkage capacity of the peat is lost, peat characteristics change irreversibly with drainage (Frank et al. 2014). With rewetting taking place, further degradation of the peat is prevented and new peat may be formed by peat forming vegetation if established. Depending on drainage and land use history, highly decomposed peat layers are located in the top horizon and less decomposed peat in subjacent layers.

It has been shown that rewetting leads to the release of large amounts of nutrients into the pore water, e.g. phosphorus, ammonium, dissolved carbon and iron (Zak and Gelbrecht 2007; Smolders et al. 2008; Knorr and Blodau 2009; Worrall et al. 2010; Zak et al. 2010; Riet et al. 2013). The *IPCC Wetlands Supplement* provides global default estimates for water-borne dissolved organic carbon fluxes (IPCC 2014).

### 1.5.2. Effect on GHG fluxes and climate impact

The recently adopted *IPCC Wetlands Supplement* provides guidance on GHG emissions from rewetted organic soils including boreal, temperate, and tropical wetlands occurring in any land-use category (IPCC 2014).

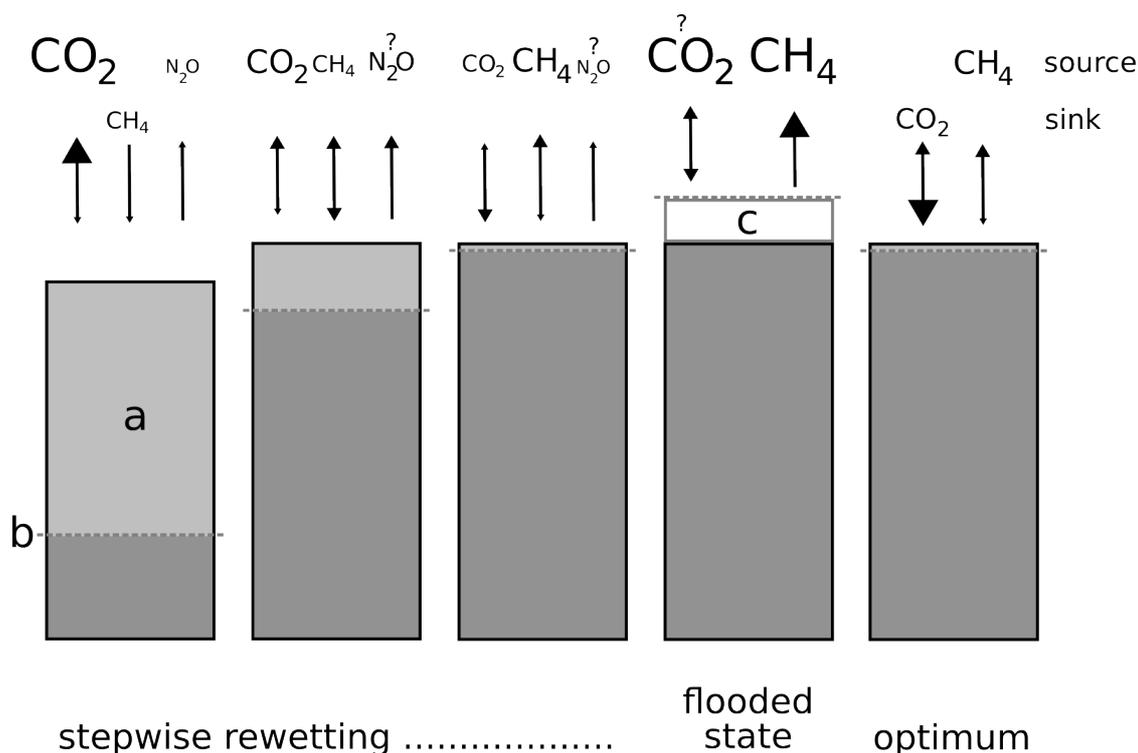


Fig. 1-3: Rewetting of peatlands: Direction and relative amount of GHG fluxes ( $\text{CO}_2$ ,  $\text{CH}_4$  and  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ ) from peat surface (the arrows indicate the direction of the gas flux, the arrow and font size exhibits the relative amount emitted or taken up); a) peat profile with aerobic (light grey) and anaerobic layer (dark grey), b) position of the water table, c) supernatant water. (The figure was amended based on those presented in (Drösler et al. 2008).

Raising the water level principally reduces CO<sub>2</sub> emissions (Fig. 1-3) due to a reduction in peat mineralization (Couwenberg et al. 2008; Worrall et al. 2010; IPCC 2014). However, re-establishing water saturated conditions in the peat also re-creates conditions favourable for methanogenesis and may, consequently, lead to an increase in CH<sub>4</sub> emissions (e.g. (Drösler 2005; Hendriks et al. 2007; Drösler et al. 2008; Worrall et al. 2010; IPCC 2014). It has been observed that after rewetting CH<sub>4</sub> emissions increased while simultaneously CO<sub>2</sub> emissions remained at a high level (Augustin and Joosten 2007; Couwenberg et al. 2008; Höper et al. 2008).

Methane has a global warming potential 25 times higher than CO<sub>2</sub> (IPCC 2007b) and, when accounting for this higher GWP, increased CH<sub>4</sub> emissions may considerably reduce the positive climate impact of rewetting measures. Due to their better nutrient supply, formerly agriculturally used peatlands produce much more CH<sub>4</sub> after rewetting than near-natural sites (Höper 2007). In addition, fluctuations of the water table may result in a drastic increase of N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (see Fig. 1-3) (Augustin and Joosten 2007; Couwenberg et al. 2008) the GWP of which is 298 times higher compared to CO<sub>2</sub> (IPCC 2007b).

Since rewetting activities have been carried out for a relatively short term, no data are available from long-term studies on rewetted peatlands (Augustin and Joosten 2007; Lunt et al. 2010). Seen on a long term perspective, GHG release from rewetted peatlands is proposed to change in three phases<sup>13</sup> – shifting the climate impact from negative to positive: During the first phase after rewetting, GHG emissions in terms of CO<sub>2</sub> equivalents are expected to be extremely high due to high CH<sub>4</sub> emissions and low CO<sub>2</sub> uptake – a strong negative climatic effect may be expected. In the second phase, the climatic effect turns slightly positive as CH<sub>4</sub> emissions decrease while CO<sub>2</sub> uptake increases. The third phase is comparable to those in pristine peatlands with their neutral climatic effect – based on low CH<sub>4</sub> release and low CO<sub>2</sub> uptake (see optimum in Fig. 1-3).

It has been shown that, on the medium to long term, rewetting definitely leads to a reduction in greenhouse gas emission compared to the situation without rewetting (Augustin and Joosten 2007; Joosten and Couwenberg 2009). However, observed evidence of the existence and length of these three individual phases is lacking. Additionally, we do not know how GHG emissions will develop within and in between these phases.

Thus on the short term, rewetting of drained peatlands also bears its risks – e.g. CH<sub>4</sub>-dominated GHG emissions – and may not necessarily turn a peatland into a GHG sink. Effective rewetting measures with respect to climate change mitigation means to raising the water table and find a trade-off between reduced peat mineralization and avoiding an increase in CH<sub>4</sub> release.

## 1.6. Motivation for performing incubation experiments and research questions

The reduction of anthropogenic greenhouse gas emissions via rewetting drained peatlands may now be accounted for in national greenhouse gas reporting under the *Kyoto Protocol*. As drained agricultural peatlands are hotspots for CO<sub>2</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O, challenging rewetting programmes are being implemented in Europe as climate mitigation measure (Joosten 2007; Höper et al. 2008). However, with raising the water table the risk of CH<sub>4</sub> emissions increases but detailed knowledge is still lacking in particular on the long-term time scale.

---

<sup>13</sup> The possible long-term shift of GHG release is based on currently available evidence from Belarussian mires (Augustin and Joosten 2007).

In order to develop effective rewetting and sustainable management measures we need to better understand the processes and factors determining GHG fluxes after rewetting (Augustin and Joosten 2007). To achieve the goal of reduced GHG emissions, practical guidance is needed to find a balance between reduction of CO<sub>2</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O release and simultaneous avoidance of high CH<sub>4</sub> emissions.

GHG emissions are extremely variable in time and space and may be explained by a multitude of factors: the complexity of processes involved in formation / transformation / release, site characteristics, weather conditions, characteristics of the peat substrate, plant development and peatland management (Augustin 2001). GHG emissions are controlled by parameters which vary considerably within the course of a year, such as water table, temperature, vegetation growth and actual management of a peatland site.

Several field studies have been performed to quantify the annual GHG balance from European peatlands (Drösler 2005; Augustin and Joosten 2007; Hendriks et al. 2007; Höper et al. 2008; Beetz et al. 2011; Drösler et al. 2011a; Beetz et al. 2013; Heinichen et al. 2014; Tiemeyer et al. 2014; Leiber-Sauheitl et al. 2014). The GHG balance – that is determined by measuring annual atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes and accounting for their different Global Warming Potentials (GWP) – may be used to assess and verify the climate mitigation effect of peatland rewetting projects and to account for GHG reduction under the *Kyoto Protocol* and the *EU LULUCF Decision* (529/2013/EU). However, annual GHG fluxes vary considerably between years (e.g. Drösler et al. 2011a; Tiemeyer et al. 2014) because they are influenced by seasonal weather conditions. Therefore, field studies are not suitable to investigate the effect of the most important determinants for GHG fluxes due to the covariance between factors.

Studying GHG fluxes under controlled conditions in the laboratory allows to purposefully investigate the factors determining GHG exchange, e.g. by systematically manipulate the water table, the duration of flooding / draining and by selecting a specific organic substrate.

The results of both field studies and laboratory experiments together can be used to develop practical guidance for low-GHG rewetting strategies for drained peatlands and to assess their impact on GHG fluxes under defined conditions.

The incubation experiments performed within this PhD thesis aimed to manipulate key drivers of CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions in a range beyond the conditions in the field, so that projections of future GHG emissions could be made based on process understanding under controlled conditions in the laboratory.

This PhD thesis aimed to investigate the role of the organic substrate and the water table under controlled environmental conditions. The main goals of the four incubation experiments were

1. to understand the mechanisms of CO<sub>2</sub> emission reduction by rewetting,
2. to find trade-offs with CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions after rewetting, and
3. to identify conditions under which CO<sub>2</sub> emission reduction safely outweigh CH<sub>4</sub> emission increase.

The incubation experiments were performed within the framework of the project „*Climate mitigation via peatland management*”<sup>14</sup> (for project details see (Drösler et al. 2011a). Peat samples originated from sites where on-site GHG measurements were performed for several years.

---

14 The project was financed by the Federal Ministry of Education and Research and lasted from 2006 to 2010.

The PhD thesis is set out in the form of three publications respectively manuscripts for publication. Consequently, detailed information, materials used and methods applied, results of the incubation experiments and discussions can be found in the respective chapters.

#### *Explanatory notes regarding the set-up of the incubation experiments*

Firstly, to investigate the effect of the organic substrate two incubation experiments (see chapter 2) were performed that:

- used mixed samples of different organic substrates;
- excluded living vegetation;
- were performed at constant temperatures in the dark;
- were performed under permanently anaerobic conditions (water table above the surface);
- included regular measurements of CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub>;
- lasted for 363 and 53 days, respectively.

Secondly, to investigate the effect of the water table two incubation experiments (see chapter 3 and chapter 4) were performed that:

- used undisturbed peat mesocosms from drained fen and bog peatlands;
- included living grassland vegetation (testing the response of water-intolerant and wetness-adapted species to changing water table);
- simulated real-world conditions in terms of temperature and radiation allowing for ideal plant growth and microbial activity;
- included regular measurements of all three GHGs (CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O), which is a prerequisite for assessing the full net GHG balance;
- were performed as long term incubations (lasting 252 and 196 days, respectively).

### **1.6.1. The effect of the organic substrate for CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emissions**

Rewetting principally reduces CO<sub>2</sub> emissions but may lead to an increase in CH<sub>4</sub> release. This was observed at a permanently flooded nutrient-rich fen grassland in Northeastern Germany where extremely high CH<sub>4</sub> emissions were measured in the years following flooding<sup>15</sup> (Augustin and Joosten 2007; Höper et al. 2008). The net climate impact of this site was even higher after flooding than under drained conditions because the ecosystem did not immediately return to its long-term CO<sub>2</sub> sink function. This on-site measurements are in contrast to expectations.

After rewetting, the investigated fen site formed a highly eutrophic shallow lake and the permanently inundated conditions led to the dying-off of the vegetation and the formation of a new sediment layer with a high content of relatively fresh plant litter<sup>16</sup>.

---

15 The flooding was done within the large-scale nature conservation project „Peene-Haffmoor / Peenetal“ by opening the dykes which limited the river Peene.

16 Due to the high nutrient load floating and submerged macrophytes were growing in the open water areas. These aquatic macrophytes have the capability to take up large amounts of nutrients but also contribute to the amount of readily degradable organic matter in the new sediment layer (Steffenhagen et al. 2012).

The two incubation experiments aimed to test the role of fresh plant litter for anaerobic CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> production and were performed with material from the phases immediately after flooding and 2.5 years later. The different organic substrates either originated from different depths or included/excluded the newly formed sediment layer. Additionally, pore water chemistry was taken into account.

*Research questions:*

*What are the possible sources of the high CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emissions on-site after rewetting? How do organic substrates from different depths or including/excluding fresh plant litter contribute to anaerobic GHG production? We hypothesize that the fresh plant litter can account for a large proportion of the increased CH<sub>4</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub> emissions.*

*When do conditions favourable for methanogenesis occur?*

These incubation experiments are described and discussed in detail in chapter 2.

### **1.6.2. The effect of the water table on GHG fluxes: stepwise rewetting and prolonged flooding**

The water table position has been identified as the most important factor influencing GHG fluxes. Draining peatlands – as usually done under agricultural management – stimulates CO<sub>2</sub> production, turning peatlands from long-term sinks to significant CO<sub>2</sub> sources, while CH<sub>4</sub> formation decreases. Rewetting – i.e. deliberately raising the water table to re-establish water saturated conditions – principally leads to a reduction of CO<sub>2</sub> emissions but might unintentionally boost CH<sub>4</sub> emissions. Eutrophic fen grasslands are the most frequent peatland and management type in Germany having a risk for high CH<sub>4</sub> (and N<sub>2</sub>O) emissions under rewetting depending on the target position of the water table.

Our knowledge of the effect of different water levels on the GHG exchange after rewetting is still restricted. In the literature, a suitable water table minimizing net GHG balance is recommended to be slightly below the peat surface – e.g. around -10 cm (Drösler et al. 2008) respectively -5 cm (Jungkunst et al. 2008). To achieve minimum GHG emissions, the optimum water table must aim to minimize peat mineralization but also to avoid high methane and nitrous oxide release as they have a much higher global warming potential compared to CO<sub>2</sub>. It is difficult to determine the functional role of the water table position from field studies due to the seasonal covariance between water table, temperature and vegetation activity.

The effect of the water table position on GHG fluxes (CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O) under controlled environmental conditions was investigated by an incubation experiment simulating gradual rewetting and prolonged flooding. The use of mesocosms from drained fen grasslands with intact vegetation allowed for the assessment of the vegetation effect on GHG fluxes.

*Research questions:*

*How does the vegetation react to raising water level and extended flooding (water-intolerant grasses versus water-tolerant sedges)? How does the contribution of autotrophic and heterotrophic respiration change with water table?*

*Are there water table thresholds for drastic changes in GHG fluxes? At which water table position are net GHG emissions minimal? How are GHG fluxes affected by extended flooding?*

*What is the effect of aerenchymous plants? Do sedges boost CH<sub>4</sub> emissions under wet conditions due to plant mediated CH<sub>4</sub> transport?*

This incubation experiment is described and discussed in detail in chapter 3.

### **1.6.3. The effect of the water table on GHG fluxes: alternating wet-dry conditions**

Rewetting is being implemented to reduce anthropogenic GHG emissions from peatlands. A high water table reduces CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from peat mineralization, however, it establishes anaerobic conditions favourable for CH<sub>4</sub> production. Flooding might cause high CH<sub>4</sub> emissions, in particular when easily degradable organic matter is present. Thus, rewetting activities should be aimed at minimum CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O release and practical guidance for low-GHG rewetting strategies is needed. The challenge of keeping CH<sub>4</sub> emissions low has been tackled in paddy rice fields<sup>17</sup> by intermittent rather than continuous flooding. In addition, the water table of a rewetted peatland area is expected to fluctuate seasonally as the water table is driven by rain events and water management.

In order to test whether mitigation strategies for rice paddies can also be applied in peatlands, we systematically quantified the GHG response and redox status of fen and bog grassland mesocosms to intermittent wet-dry conditions under constant meteorological conditions.

*Research questions:*

*How do grassland vegetation, photosynthesis, respiration, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes react to a dynamic change in the water table from wet to dry conditions and vice versa? How do wet respectively dry conditions affect the net GHG balance?*

*Is the response fully reversible when water table switches back to the original position, and repeatable? Is there a memory effect of previous flooding or drainage events?*

*What length of interim dry periods is needed to effectively reduce CH<sub>4</sub> emissions?*

*Do wet-dry cycles foster N<sub>2</sub>O emissions?*

*Can alternating water tables work as low-GHG management strategies in peat grasslands?*

This incubation experiment is described and discussed in detail in chapter 4.

---

<sup>17</sup> By alternating wet and dry phases methane emissions were potentially reduced by 48% compared with continuous flooding of rice fields (Siopongco et al. 2013). The water level in the rice field is lowered to 15 cm below the soil surface for a period of 1 to more than 10 days and re-flooded to a depth of around +5 cm.

## 1.7. Bibliography

- Ad-Hoc-AG Boden (2005) *Bodenkundliche Kartieranleitung*, 5. Auflage. pp 438.
- Augustin J (2001) Emission, Aufnahme und Klimarelevanz von Spurengasen. In: Succow M, Joosten H (eds) *Landschaftsökologische Moorkunde*, 2. Auflage. Schweitzerbart'sche Verlagsbuchhandlung, pp 28–37
- Augustin J, Couwenberg J, Minke M (2011) Peatlands and greenhouse gases. In: Tanneberger F, Wichtmann W (eds) *Carbon credits from peatland rewetting: climate - biodiversity - land use*. Schweitzerbart Science Publishers, Stuttgart, pp 13–19
- Augustin J, Joosten H (2007) Peatland rewetting and the greenhouse effect. *International Mire Conservation Group Newsletter* 3:29–30.
- Beetz S, Liebersbach H, Glatzel S, et al. (2013) Effects of land use intensity on the full greenhouse gas balance in an Atlantic peat bog. *Biogeosciences* 10:1067–1082. doi: 10.5194/bg-10-1067-2013
- Beetz S, Liebersbach H, Höper H, et al. (2011) Greenhouse gas exchange and global warming potential of a peat bog restoration sequence in NW Germany. *Geophysical Research Abstracts* 13:2011–2011.
- Couwenberg J (2009a) Methane emissions from peat soils: Facts, MRV-ability, emission factors. Report for the UN-FCCC meetings in Bonn, August 2009. *International Wetlands* pp 16.
- Couwenberg J (2009b) Emission factors for managed peat soils: An analysis of IPCC default values. Report for the UN-FCCC meetings in Bonn, June 2009. *Wetlands International* pp 16.
- Couwenberg J, Augustin J, Michaelis D, et al. (2008) Entwicklung von Grundsätzen für eine Bewertung von Niedermooren hinsichtlich ihrer Klimarelevanz. Studie im Auftrag des Ministerium für Landwirtschaft und Naturschutz Mecklenburg-Vorpommern. pp 33.
- Davidson EA, Keller M, Erickson HE, et al. (2000) Testing a conceptual model of soil emissions of nitrous and nitric oxides. *Bioscience* 50:667–680.
- Drösler M (2005) Trace gas exchange and climatic relevance of bog ecosystems, Southern Germany. Dissertation pp 182.
- Drösler M, Adelman W, Augustin J, et al. (2011a) Klimaschutz durch Moorschutz - Schlussbericht des Vorhabens „Klimaschutz - Moornutzungsstrategien“ - “Climate mitigation via peatland management”, 2006-2010. pp 178.
- Drösler M, Freibauer A, Adelman W, et al. (2011b) Klimaschutz durch Moorschutz in der Praxis: Ergebnisse aus dem BMBF-Verbundprojekt „Klimaschutz - Moornutzungsstrategien“ - “Climate mitigation via peatland management”, 2006-2010. pp 21.

- Drösler M, Freibauer A, Christensen TR, Friborg T (2008) Observations and status of peatland greenhouse gas emissions in Europe. In: Dolman AJ, Valentini R, Freibauer A (eds) *The continental-scale greenhouse gas balance of Europe*. Springer Verlag, pp 243–262
- Estop-Aragonés C, Blodau C (2012) Effects of experimental drying intensity and duration on respiration and methane production recovery in fen peat incubations. *Soil Biology and Biochemistry* 47:1–9. doi: 10.1016/j.soilbio.2011.12.008
- Firestone MK, Davidson EA (1989) Microbiological Basis of NO and N<sub>2</sub>O Production and Consumption in soil. In: Andreae MO, Schimel DS (eds) *Exchange of Trace Gases between Terrestrial Ecosystems and the Atmosphere*. John Wiley & Sons Ltd, pp 7–21
- Flessa H, Wild U, Klemisch M, Pfadenhauer J (1998) Nitrous oxide and methane fluxes from organic soils under agriculture. *European Journal of Soil Science* 49:327–335.
- Frank S, Tiemeyer B, Gelbrecht J, Freibauer A (2014) High soil solution carbon and nitrogen concentrations in a drained Atlantic bog are reduced to natural levels by 10 years of rewetting. *Biogeosciences* 11:2309–2324. doi: doi:10.5194/bg-11-2309-2014
- Freibauer A, Drösler M, Gensior A, Schulze E.-D. (2009) Das Potenzial von Wäldern und Mooren für den Klimaschutz in Deutschland und auf globaler Ebene. *Natur und Landschaft* 1i:20–25.
- Freibauer A, Rounsevell MDA, Smith P, Verhagen J (2004) Carbon sequestration in the agricultural soils of Europe. *Geoderma* 122:1–23. doi: 10.1016/j.geoderma.2004.01.021
- Frolking S, Roulet N, Fuglestvedt J (2006) How northern peatlands influence the Earth's radiative budget: Sustained methane emission versus sustained carbon sequestration. *Journal of Geophysical Research* 111:G01008. doi: 10.1029/2005JG000091
- Glatzel S, Basiliko N, Moore T (2004) Carbon dioxide and methane production potentials of peats from natural, harvested and restored sites, Eastern Quebec, Canada. *Wetlands* 24:261–267.
- Gorham E (1991) Northern peatlands: role in the carbon cycle and probable responses to climatic warming. *Ecological Applications* 1:182–195.
- Grønlund A, Hauge A, Hovde A, Rasse DP (2008) Carbon loss estimates from cultivated peat soils in Norway: a comparison of three methods. *Nutrient Cycling in Agroecosystems* 81:157–167. doi: 10.1007/s10705-008-9171-5
- Grønlund A, Sveistrup TE, Søvik AK, et al. (2006) Degradation of cultivated peat soils in northern Norway based on field scale CO<sub>2</sub>, N<sub>2</sub>O and CH<sub>4</sub> emission measurements. *Archives of Agronomy and Soil Science* 52:149–159. doi: 10.1080/03650340600581968
- Hahn-Schöfl M, Zak D, Minke M, et al. (2011) Organic sediment formed during inundation of a degraded fen grassland emits large fluxes of CH<sub>4</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub>. *Biogeosciences* 8:1539–1550. doi: 10.5194/bg-8-1539-2011
- Heinichen J, Eickenscheidt T, Drösler M (2014) How do land use intensity, experimentally increased temperature and water level affect methane and nitrous oxide emissions from a drained fen peatland? *Geophysical Research Abstracts* 16:13193.

- Hendriks DMD, Huissteden J Van, Dolman AJ, Molen MK Van Der (2007) The full greenhouse gas balance of an abandoned peat meadow. *Biogeosciences* 4:411–424. doi: 10.5194/bg-4-411-2007
- Hooijer A, Page S, Jauhiainen J, et al. (2012) Subsidence and carbon loss in drained tropical peatlands. *Biogeosciences* 9:1053–1071. doi: 10.5194/bg-9-1053-2012
- Höper H (2007) Freisetzung von Treibhausgasen aus deutschen Mooren. *TELMA - Berichte der Deutschen Gesellschaft für Moor- und Torfkunde* Band 37:85–116.
- Höper H, Augustin J, Cagampan J, et al. (2008) Restoration of peatlands and greenhouse gas balances. In: Strack M (ed) *Peatlands and Climate Change*. International Peat Society, Jyväskylä, pp 182–210
- Houghton JT, Jenkins GJ, Ephraums JJ (1990) *Climate Change, The IPCC Scientific Assessment*. pp 410.
- IPCC (2006) *Consistent Representation of Lands*, chapter 3. 2006 IPCC Guidelines for National Greenhouse Gas Inventories. p 42
- IPCC (2007a) *IPCC Fourth Assessment Report: Climate Change (AR4)*.
- IPCC (2014) 2013 Supplement to the 2006 IPCC Guidelines for National Greenhouse Gas Inventories: Wetlands. Hiraishi T, Krug T, Tanabe K, Srivastava N, Baasansuren J, Fukuda M and Troxler TG (eds). pp 331.
- IPCC (2007b) *IPCC Fourth Assessment Report (AR4), Working Group 1, Chapter 2, Changes in Atmospheric Constituents and in Radiative Forcing*. pp 234.
- IPS (2008) *Peatlands and Climate Change*. International Peat Society. Strack M (ed). pp 223.
- Joosten H (2010a) The Global Peatland CO<sub>2</sub> Picture: Peatland status and drainage related emissions in all countries of the world. *Wetlands International*. pp 36.
- Joosten H (2010b) Recent achievements on the peatland/climate front. *International Mire Conservation Group Newsletter* 2-3:4–10.
- Joosten H (2011a) Sensitising global conventions for climate change mitigation by peatlands. In: Tanneberger F, Wichtmann W (eds) *Carbon credits from peatland rewetting: climate - biodiversity - land use*. Schweitzerbart Science Publishers, Stuttgart, pp 90–94
- Joosten H (2011b) Selling peatland rewetting on the compliance carbon market. In: Tanneberger F, Wichtmann W (eds) *Carbon credits from peatland rewetting: climate - biodiversity - land use*. Schweitzerbart Science Publishers, Stuttgart, pp 99–105
- Joosten H (2007) Belarus takes the lead in peatland restoration for climate! *International Mire Conservation Group Newsletter* 3:21–23.
- Joosten H, Couwenberg J (2009) Are emission reductions from peatlands measurable, reportable and verifiable? Report for the UN-FCCC meetings in Bonn, June 2009. *Wetlands International*. pp 14.

- Joosten H, Couwenberg J (2001) Bilanzen zum Moorerlust: Das Beispiel Europa. *Landschaftsökologische Moorkunde*, 2. Auflage. Schweitzerbart'sche Verlagsbuchhandlung, pp 406–408
- Jungkunst HF, Flessa H, Scherber C, Fiedler S (2008) Groundwater level controls CO<sub>2</sub>, N<sub>2</sub>O and CH<sub>4</sub> fluxes of three different hydromorphic soil types of a temperate forest ecosystem. *Soil Biology and Biochemistry* 40:2047–2054. doi: 10.1016/j.soilbio.2008.04.015
- Kasimir-Klemedtsson Å, Klemedtsson L, Berglund K, et al. (1997) Greenhouse gas emissions from farmed organic soils: a review. *Soil Use and Management* 13:245–250. doi: 10.1111/j.1475-2743.1997.tb00595.x
- Keddy PA (2010) *Wetland ecology: Principles and Conservation*. Cambridge University Press., 2nd ed. pp 497.
- Knorr K-H, Blodau C (2009) Impact of experimental drought and rewetting on redox transformations and methanogenesis in mesocosms of a northern fen soil. *Soil Biology and Biochemistry* 41:1187–1198. doi: 10.1016/j.soilbio.2009.02.030
- Koppisch D (2001) Kohlenstoff-Umsetzungsprozesse. In: Succow M, Joosten H (eds) *Landschaftsökologische Moorkunde*, 2. Auflage. Schweitzerbart'sche Verlagsbuchhandlung, Stuttgart, pp 19–20
- Leiber-Sauheitl K, Fuß R, Voigt C, Freibauer A (2014) High CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes from grassland on histic Gleysol along soil carbon and drainage gradients. *Biogeosciences* 11:749–761. doi: 10.5194/bg-11-749-2014
- Limpens J, Berendse F, Blodau C, et al. (2008) Peatlands and the carbon cycle: from local processes to global implications – a synthesis. *Biogeosciences* 5:1475–1491.
- Lunt P, Allott T, Anderson P, et al. (2010) Peatland restoration. Scientific review commissioned by the IUCN UK Peatland Programme. pp 45.
- Page S, Banks C, Rieley J (2010) Extent and significance of tropical peat carbon pools. CARBOPEAT Technical Report 1. pp 55.
- Page S, Siegert F, Rieley JO, et al. (2002) The amount of carbon released from peat and forest fires in Indonesia during 1997. *1999*:61–65. doi: 10.1038/nature01141.1.
- Ramsar (1971) Convention on wetlands of international importance especially as waterfowl habitat. Ramsar (Iran), 2 February 1971. UN Treaty Series No. 14583 as amended by the Paris Protocol, 3 December 1982, and Regina Amendments, 28 May 1987.
- Ramsar (2002) Guidelines for Global Action on Peatlands (GAP). 8th Meeting of the Conference of the Contracting Parties to the Convention on Wetlands (Ramsar, Iran, 1971)
- Reiche M, Gleixner G, Küsel K (2010) Effect of peat quality on microbial greenhouse gas formation in an acidic fen. *Biogeosciences* 7:187–198.

- Riet BP, Hefting MM, Verhoeven JTA (2013) Rewetting drained peat meadows: risks and benefits in terms of nutrient release and greenhouse gas exchange. *Water, Air, & Soil Pollution* 224:1440. doi: 10.1007/s11270-013-1440-5
- Roulet NT, Laffleur PM, Richard PJH, et al. (2007) Contemporary carbon balance and late Holocene carbon accumulation in a northern peatland. *Global Change Biology* 13:397–411.
- Segers R (1998) Methane production and methane consumption : a review of processes underlying wetland methane fluxes. *Biogeochemistry* 41:23–51.
- Siopongco JDLC, Wassmann R, Sander BO (2013) Alternate wetting and drying in Philippine rice production: feasibility study for a clean development mechanism. *International Rice Research Institute, IRRI Technical Bulletin No 17* pp 14.
- Smolders AJP, Lucassen ECHET, van der Aalst M, et al. (2008) Decreasing the abundance of *Juncus effusus* on former agricultural lands with noncalcareous sandy soils: Possible effects of liming and soil removal. *Restoration Ecology* 16:240–248.
- Smolders AJP, Tomassen HBM, Lamers LPM, et al. (2002) Peat bog restoration by floating raft formation: the effects of groundwater and peat quality. *Journal of Applied Ecology* 39:391–401. doi: 10.1046/j.1365-2664.2002.00724.x
- Steffenhagen P, Zak D, Schulz K, et al. (2012) Biomass and nutrient stock of submersed and floating macrophytes in shallow lakes formed by rewetting of degraded fens. *Hydrobiologia* 692:99–109. doi: 10.1007/s10750-011-0833-y
- Stegmann H, Zeitz J (2001) Bodenbildende Prozesse entwässerter Moore. *Landschaftsökologische Moorkunde*, 2. Auflage. Schweitzerbart'sche Verlagsbuchhandlung, pp 47–57
- Succow M (2001a) Kurzer Abriß der Nutzungsgeschichte mitteleuropäischer Moore. In: Succow M, Joosten H (eds) *Landschaftsökologische Moorkunde*, 2. Auflage. Schweitzerbart'sche Verlagsbuchhandlung, Stuttgart, pp 404–405
- Succow M (2001b) Zusammenfassende Beurteilung der Folgen tiefgreifender agrarischer Nutzungsintensivierung der letzten Jahrzehnte auf die Niedermoorstandorte Norddeutschlands. In: Succow M, Joosten H (eds) *Landschaftsökologische Moorkunde*, 2. Auflage. Schweitzerbart'sche Verlagsbuchhandlung, Stuttgart, pp 463–465
- Tanneberger F, Wichtmann W (2011) Carbon credits from peatland rewetting: climate - biodiversity - land use. *Schweitzerbart Science Publishers*, 1st ed. pp 223.
- Tiemeyer B, Borraz EA, Augustin J, et al. (2014) Greenhouse gas budgets for grasslands on peatlands and other organic soils. *Geophysical Research Abstracts Vol 16*, EGU2014-14825
- Umweltbundesamt (2013) Nationaler Inventarbericht zum Deutschen Treibhausgasinventar 1990 - 2011. *Climate Change* 08/2013. pp 885.
- Waddington JM, Warner KD, Kennedy GW (2002) Cutover peatlands : A persistent source of atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub>. *Global Biogeochemical Cycles* 16:1002. doi: doi:10.1029/2001GB001398

- Worrall F, Chapman P, Holden J, et al. (2010) Peatlands and Climate Change. A review commissioned by the IUCN UK Peatland Programme. pp 15.
- WRB IUSS Working Group (2006) World reference base for soil resources 2006. World Soil Resources Reports No 103. pp 145.
- Zak D, Gelbrecht J (2007) The mobilisation of phosphorus, organic carbon and ammonium in the initial stage of fen rewetting (a case study from NE Germany). *Biogeochemistry* 85:141–151. doi: 10.1007/s10533-007-9122-2
- Zak D, Wagner C, Payer B, et al. (2010) Phosphorus mobilization in rewetted fens: the effect of altered peat properties and implications for their restoration. *Ecological Applications* 20:1336–49.

## Chapter 2: Publication I

### Organic sediment formed during inundation of a degraded fen grassland emits large fluxes of CH<sub>4</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub>

*authors:*

M. Hahn-Schöfl (MPI-BGC), D. Zak (IGB), M. Minke (ZALF), J. Gelbrecht (IGB), J. Augustin (ZALF), A. Freibauer (MPI-BGC) (for author details see the following page)

*status:*

published in Biogeosciences, 8, 1539–1550, 2011

*own contributions:*

- assistance in experimental set-up for „organic substrate incubation“; measurement of gas concentration in pore water
- statistical analysis of all data
- graphical presentation
- data interpretation and discussion of results
- planning and writing of the publication
- submission and revision of the publication

*contributions by co-authors:*

- all data from „peat layer incubation“<sup>18</sup>
- experimental set-up for „organic substrate incubation“<sup>19</sup>; measurement of gas fluxes from peat surface (M. Minke, J. Augustin) and analysis of pore water chemistry (D. Zak, J. Gelbrecht)
- supervision of PhD thesis (A. Freibauer)

---

18 The „peat layer incubation“ described in this publication was performed before this PhD thesis as a joint activity by ZALF and IGB. The data of the „peat layer incubation“ have been made available for data analysis and publication to Maria Hahn-Schöfl within the framework of scientific cooperation.

19 The „organic substrate incubation“ was planned and performed as a joint activity by ZALF, IGB and MPI-BGC.

Biogeosciences, 8, 1539–1550, 2011  
www.biogeosciences.net/8/1539/2011/  
doi:10.5194/bg-8-1539-2011  
© Author(s) 2011. CC Attribution 3.0 License.



## Organic sediment formed during inundation of a degraded fen grassland emits large fluxes of CH<sub>4</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub>

M. Hahn-Schöfl<sup>1</sup>, D. Zak<sup>2</sup>, M. Minke<sup>3</sup>, J. Gelbrecht<sup>2</sup>, J. Augustin<sup>4</sup>, and A. Freibauer<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Max Planck Institute for Biogeochemistry, Hans-Knöll-Strasse 10, 07745 Jena, Germany

<sup>2</sup>Leibniz Institute for Freshwater Ecology and Inland Fisheries e. V. (IGB), Müggelseedamm 301, 12561 Berlin, Germany

<sup>3</sup>APB BirdLife Belarus, Surganova 2v, Minsk, Belarus

<sup>4</sup>Leibniz Centre for Agricultural Landscape Research e. V., Eberswalder Strasse 84, 15374 Müncheberg, Germany

<sup>5</sup>Johann Heinrich von Thünen Institute, Federal Research Institute for Rural Areas, Forestry and Fisheries, Bundesallee 50, 38116 Braunschweig, Germany

Received: 15 September 2010 – Published in Biogeosciences Discuss.: 22 December 2010

Revised: 3 May 2011 – Accepted: 16 May 2011 – Published: 16 June 2011

**Abstract.** Peatland restoration by inundation of drained areas can alter local greenhouse gas emissions as CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub>. Factors that can influence these emissions include the quality and amount of substrates available for anaerobic degradation processes and the sources and availability of electron acceptors. In order to learn about possible sources of high CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emissions from a rewetted degraded fen grassland, we performed incubation experiments that tested the effects of fresh plant litter in the flooded peats on pore water chemistry and CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> production and emission.

The position in the soil profile of the pre-existing drained peat substrate affected initial rates of anaerobic CO<sub>2</sub> production subsequent to flooding, with the uppermost peat layer producing the greatest specific rates of CO<sub>2</sub> evolution. CH<sub>4</sub> production rates depended on the availability of electron acceptors and was significant only when sulfate concentrations were reduced in the pore waters. Very high specific rates of both CO<sub>2</sub> (maximum of 412 mg C d<sup>-1</sup> kg<sup>-1</sup> C) and CH<sub>4</sub> production (788 mg C d<sup>-1</sup> kg<sup>-1</sup> C) were observed in a new sediment layer that accumulated over the 2.5 years since the site was flooded. This new sediment layer was characterized by overall low C content, but represented a mixture of sand and relatively easily decomposable plant litter from reed canary grass killed by flooding. Samples that excluded this new sediment layer but included intact roots remaining from flooded grasses had specific rates of CO<sub>2</sub> (max. 28 mg C d<sup>-1</sup> kg<sup>-1</sup> C) and CH<sub>4</sub> (max. 34 mg C d<sup>-1</sup> kg<sup>-1</sup> C) production that were

10–20 times lower than for the new sediment layer and were comparable to those of a newly flooded upper peat layer. Lowest rates of anaerobic CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> production (range of 4–8 mg C d<sup>-1</sup> kg<sup>-1</sup> C and <1 mg C d<sup>-1</sup> kg<sup>-1</sup> C) were observed when all fresh organic matter sources (plant litter and roots) were excluded. In conclusion, the presence of fresh organic substrates such as plant and root litter originating from plants killed by inundation has a high potential for CH<sub>4</sub> production, whereas peat without any fresh plant-derived material is relatively inert. Significant anaerobic CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> production in peat only occurs when some labile organic matter is available, e.g. from remaining roots or root exudates.

### 1 Introduction

Peatlands are recognized as a key player in the atmospheric greenhouse gas (GHG) budget. Although only covering ~3% of the total land area, the carbon accumulated in peatlands corresponds to almost half of the total atmospheric C stock (Houghton et al., 1990; Gorham, 1991). Natural peatlands act as sinks for atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> and as sources of the methane (CH<sub>4</sub>), which has a higher global warming potential than CO<sub>2</sub>. The net climate impact of natural peatlands in Europe is nearly zero (Drösler et al., 2008). Drainage of peatland, e.g. for agricultural use, forestry or for peat extraction, turns peatlands from long-term sinks to significant sources of CO<sub>2</sub>, while CH<sub>4</sub> emissions cease. This leads to a dramatic increase in the net climate impact (Drösler et al., 2008; Augustin, 2001; Nykänen et al., 1998; Alm et al., 2007). In 2007, drained German peatlands used as cropland and



Correspondence to: M. Hahn-Schöfl  
(maria.hahn@yahoo.de)

1540

M. Hahn-Schöfl et al.: CH<sub>4</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from degraded fen

grassland emitted about 24 000 and 13 000 Gg CO<sub>2</sub>, respectively, corresponding to approximately 3 % and 2 % of total anthropogenic CO<sub>2</sub> emissions in Germany (Umweltbundesamt, 2009). Furthermore, long-term drainage and agricultural use of peatlands cause irreversible chemical and physical changes in peat characteristics, a loss of organic carbon and concurrently internal eutrophication of the peat soils (Zak et al. 2008).

Peatland restoration via rewetting (inundation), i.e. by raising the local groundwater table, is currently being implemented in Germany with the explicit goal of reducing GHG emissions (Höper et al., 2008). Rewetting principally reduces CO<sub>2</sub> emissions but can often lead to a sharp increase in CH<sub>4</sub> release, as confirmed by field studies in fen (Hendriks et al., 2007; Wilson et al., 2008) and bog ecosystems (Tuittila et al., 2000; Drösler, 2005).

Extremely high CH<sub>4</sub> emissions were observed in a flooded fen grassland in NE Germany (up to 205 g C m<sup>-2</sup> yr<sup>-1</sup>) in the years following flooding. Contrary to expectations, in this location the net climate impact after flooding was even higher than under drained conditions as the ecosystem did not immediately return to its long-term CO<sub>2</sub> sink function (Chojnicki et al., 2007; Höper et al., 2008). As yet, the reason for the excessive CH<sub>4</sub> release and the weak CO<sub>2</sub> sink function of this flooded fen grassland is not known. However, precise knowledge of these processes is needed to predict if and when a reduction of the expected net climate impact will take place and to propose optimized rewetting measures.

A possible source of the high CH<sub>4</sub> production and cause of the weak CO<sub>2</sub> sink function after flooding could be the rapid anaerobic decomposition of organic matter in the nutrient-rich upper part of the peat layer. It has previously been shown that this layer releases large quantities of nutrients and dissolved organic carbon once waterlogged conditions have been re-established in peat (Zak and Gelbrecht, 2007). Furthermore, primary production and the deposition of plant litter in the top layer may increase CH<sub>4</sub> emissions under anoxic conditions (Tuittila et al., 2000; Juutinen et al., 2003; Wilson et al., 2008), as labile organic matter is a prerequisite for anaerobic CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> formation (Glatzel et al., 2004; Segers, 1998; Conrad, 1989). Raising the water table not only affects GHG exchange but also the vitality and composition of the vegetation (Drösler, personal communication; Clymo, 1984). On the above-mentioned fen grassland in NE Germany, the vegetation, which was dominated by reed canary grass (*Phalaris arundinacea*), died back during the first year of inundation and mixed with sand to form a new sediment layer with a high content of relatively fresh plant litter.

Therefore, we hypothesize that fresh plant litter as a major component of the newly formed sediment can account for a large proportion of the major CH<sub>4</sub> emissions and reduced CO<sub>2</sub> sink strength as a result of increased CO<sub>2</sub> formation. The aim of this study was to quantify the anaerobic CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> production potential of different organic substrates from this highly degraded fen under rewetted condi-

tions. Two incubation experiments were performed to show how GHG emissions differ in pure peat and peat with root litter, compared to the newly formed sediment layer, while also taking pore water chemistry into account. On the basis of the incubation experiments, the risk of high CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emissions in inundated degraded fen grasslands can be assessed.

## 2 Material and methods

### 2.1 Site description

The sampling site “Polder Zarnekow” is located in the valley of the river Peene, 8 km west of the town Demmin (Mecklenburg-Vorpommern, NE Germany; 53°52.5′ N, 12°52.3′ E). The climate is moderately continental temperate with a mean annual air temperature of 8.5 °C and a mean annual precipitation of 544 mm. The mean daily temperature is −0.8 °C in January and 16.7 °C in July (Teterow meteorological station, 24 km south-west of the sampling site). The fen is characterized as a river valley mire system with percolation mires dominated by groundwater flow (Joosten and Succow, 2001).

Drainage of these areas began in the early 18th century and was strongly intensified at the end of the 1960s for agricultural use as intensive grassland (Lenschow et al., 2003). In October 2004, the site was rewetted in the course of an EU-funded conservation project. Since then, field measurements of gas exchange have been performed at this site (see introduction and discussion). Due to substantial peat loss and shrinkage, the Zarnekow polder now appears as a shallow lake permanently inundated with a water level of about +0.1 to +0.5 m (Zak and Gelbrecht, 2007). The subjacent peat layer is up to 10 m thick. Due to peat mineralization during decades of drainage, the upper 0.3 m approximately can be classified as highly decomposed peat (H 10) according to the von Post scale (Puustjärvi, 1970), however, since the soil material is strongly mineralized they are also called “muck-soils” (Okruszko, 1995). Below, slightly to moderately decomposed peat (H 3 to 6) can be found which has either not been affected by the drainage or has been only slightly affected. Long-term drainage and previous agricultural use led to a loss of organic carbon (due to peat oxidation) and, therefore, to an enrichment of P and N with decreasing molar ratios of C:P and C:N in upper soil layers (Zak and Gelbrecht 2007). Concurrently, organic bound P and N was transformed into labile inorganic forms (peat mineralization) supporting the internal eutrophication of the peat soils (Zak et al. 2008).

The former grassland vegetation, dominated by reed canary grass (*Phalaris arundinacea*), died back during the first year of inundation. Since the second year of inundation, the water body of the shallow lake has been dominated by water plants like *Ceratophyllum* and *Lemna* sp. adapted to

**Table 1.** Selected peat characteristics for peat from different horizons, as well as sediment/peat substrates incubated in two experiments sampled from the Zarnekow polder (mean,  $n = 3$ ).

	Peat layers (m)	dbd (g cm <sup>-3</sup> )	H <sup>c</sup>	OM <sup>d</sup> (%)	C <sup>e</sup> (%)	N <sup>e</sup> (%)	C:N <sup>e</sup>	C:P
Peat layer incubation								
Upper peat layer	-0.1 to -0.2	0.30 <sup>a</sup>	10	76	40	3.4	12	320
Middle peat layer	-0.5 to -0.6	0.18 <sup>a</sup>	6	84	44	2.8	16	720
Lower peat layer	-1.0 to -1.2	0.12 <sup>a</sup>	3	89	48	2.7	18	1550
Organic substrate incubation								
Organic sediment	+0.05 to +0.3	0.2 <sup>b</sup>	–	40	13 (s) 44 (p)	1.1 (s) 1.4 (p)	11 (s) 32 (p)	–
“Peat with roots”	-0.05 to -0.2	0.4 <sup>b</sup>	10	28	16 (s) 44 (p)	1.4 (s) 1.2 (p)	11 (s) 38 (p)	–
“Peat only”	-0.1 to -0.2	0.3 <sup>b</sup>	10	76	39.8	3.5	11	–

<sup>a</sup> Dry bulk density from Zak and Gelbrecht (2007).<sup>b</sup> Dry bulk density estimated.<sup>c</sup> Degree of peat decomposition according to von Post-scale (Puustjärvi, 1970; Zak and Gelbrecht, 2007).<sup>d</sup> Organic matter in % of dry weight determined by loss of ignition.<sup>e</sup> Organic substrate incubation: C- and N-content were determined separately for (s) sediment/peat substrate (<2 mm fraction) and (p) plant material.

high nutrient concentrations. An organic sediment layer up to 0.3 m thick was formed at the bottom of the shallow lake with a high content of relatively fresh organic matter from the dying-off of plants. Under the prevailing eutrophic and inundated conditions, the substrate pool is assumed to be continuously refilled by litter from submerged macrophytes and helophytes from the nearby littoral zone.

## 2.2 Incubation experiments

Two different incubation experiments under simulated flooding were performed to elucidate the impact of different organic substrates on GHG emissions. In the first experiment, peat from different soil depths was incubated (hereafter peat layer incubation) (see Table 2). The second experiment (hereafter organic substrate incubation) focused on three kinds of organic substrates taken from the uppermost layer of the peat. These substrates differed in the amount of fresh plant litter or roots present and in the time elapsed since the flooding of the wetland. In both experiments temperature was kept constant and the anaerobic production potential for CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> as well as pore water chemistry were investigated. An overview of selected characteristics of the incubated substrates, including chemical data, is given in Table 1.

### 2.2.1 Peat layer incubation: experimental set up and chemical analysis

Peat samples were extracted by spade in August 2004 (prior to rewetting on site) from three successive, superimposed soil horizons: upper peat layer (from -0.1 to -0.2 m depth), middle peat layer (from -0.5 to -0.6 m), and lower peat layer (from -1.0 to -1.2 m) (3 replicates each). The ground-

water level at the time of sampling was lower than the deepest sampling depth. Consequently, we assume that aerobic conditions were present for all samples taken from different soil depths. Visible fresh roots were removed by hand from the upper peat layer during peat homogenization. However, it was impossible to remove all fresh plant-derived material. As the upper peat layer was the rooting zone of the grassland vegetation, it can be assumed that some fresh organic matter e.g. from rhizodeposition may be present in the peat.

For incubation, water-tight PVC boxes (0.6 m × 0.4 m × 0.4 m; 96 L) were used. The incubation vessels were filled with ~40 kg mixed peat samples from the different horizons (0.2 m high, ~0.05 m<sup>3</sup>). For experimental rewetting of the peat, 3.4 mM sodium chloride solution, equivalent to the average ionic strength of the fen-feeding groundwater, was added. To ensure water-saturated conditions throughout the experiment, the water level was kept 5 cm above the peat surface, and evaporation loss was replaced with deionized water. Incubation lasted for 363 days in a climate chamber at a constant temperature of 20 ± 1 °C under dark conditions to avoid algae growth. The incubation vessels were kept open to the atmosphere except during the brief intervals when gas fluxes were measured.

The rates of CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emitted from the various substrate surfaces were determined using the closed chamber method, measuring the concentration change in the headspace over time (Schinner, 1993). For this purpose, the incubation vessels were closed for one hour by gas-tight lids equipped with plugs for gas sampling. Gas samples were taken from the headspace using evacuated glass flasks (100 mL) at 0, 0.5 and 1 h and were analyzed by the gas chromatograph (GC 145, Shimadzu) (Loftfield et al., 1997). We

1542

M. Hahn-Schöfl et al.: CH<sub>4</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from degraded fen**Table 2.** Overview of the two incubations performed.

	Peat layer incubation	Organic substrate incubation
Duration	363 days	53 days
Substrates incubated (3 replicates each)	Peat taken from different depths (upper, middle and lower peat layer)	Upper peat layer with differing quality of plant litter (organic sediment, “peat with roots”, “peat only”)
Incubation conditions	20 ± 1 °C no light, water stagnant conditions	15 ± 1 °C no light, water stagnant conditions
Incubation vessels	Open PVC-boxes (0.6 × 0.4 × 0.4 m) with closure lid for gas exchange measurement	Continuously closed PVC-columns (d = 0.15 m, h = 0.35 m)
Substrate volume	h = 0.2 m, V = 0.05 m <sup>3</sup>	h = 0.27 m, V = 0.005 m <sup>3</sup>
Measurement of gas fluxes	CO <sub>2</sub> and CH <sub>4</sub> emission from surface (every two weeks/monthly, closed chamber method)	CO <sub>2</sub> and CH <sub>4</sub> emission from surface (continuously, flow-through system)
Determination of gas concentrations in pore water	–	CO <sub>2</sub> and CH <sub>4</sub> concentration in silicone probes (every 1–11 days)
Analysis of pore water chemistry	pH, redox potential, soluble reactive phosphorus (SRP), NH <sub>4</sub> -N, SO <sub>4</sub> <sup>2-</sup> , Fe, Ca, dissolved inorganic and organic carbon (DIC, DOC) concentrations in pore water (at beginning and end of incubation)	pH, redox potential, soluble reactive phosphorus (SRP), Fe and Ca concentrations in pore water (at end of incubation)

assumed linearity. Sampling was done every two weeks for the first 8 weeks and monthly thereafter.

Emission rates of CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> related to carbon content of the peat substrate and time (mg C d<sup>-1</sup> kg<sup>-1</sup> C) were calculated according to Eq. (1):

$$\text{emission rate} = \frac{M \times p \times V}{R \times T \times A} \times \frac{dc}{dt} \times \frac{1}{Ct} \quad (1)$$

in which  $M$  is the atomic mass of carbon,  $p$  is the air pressure,  $V$  the volume of the headspace,  $R$  the gas constant,  $T$  the temperature,  $A$  the area of the incubation vessel,  $dc$  the difference of gas concentrations,  $dt$  the time interval between gas sampling, and  $Ct$  is the carbon content of the peat substrate.

For the analysis of pore water chemistry, rechargeable dialysis samplers were used, as described in detail by Zak and Gelbrecht (2007). Briefly, the one-chamber-sampler (~0.05 L) was adjusted in the peat at 1–11 cm depth at the beginning of the incubation experiment. For sampling, the chamber water was completely removed with a pipette and directly renewed by oxygen-free deionized water in order to avoid oxygen input into the anoxic peat. Sampling was done every two weeks for the first 8 weeks and monthly thereafter over the 363-day incubation period. To prevent oxidation and subsequent precipitation of redox-sensitive substances, pore water samples were taken quickly and stabilized with hydrochloric acid (2 M HCl). Pore water pH was determined using a pH probe (WTW), the redox potential by a Pt electrode with Ag/AgCl reference electrode, and measured values were adjusted to standard hydrogen potential and pH of

7. Soluble reactive phosphorus (SRP) was analyzed photometrically by the molybdenum blue method, NH<sub>4</sub>-N was determined photometrically by the indophenol method. Fe and Ca concentrations in the pore water were analyzed by flame atomic absorption spectrometry and sulfate concentrations by ion chromatography. DIC and DOC were measured with a C-Analyzer. Further details on fixation of anoxic pore water samples and chemical analysis can be found in Zak and Gelbrecht (2007).

### 2.2.2 Organic substrate incubation: experimental set up and chemical analysis

Three different organic substrates were investigated: (1) organic sediment formed post-flooding (from fragmented fresh roots and leaves, which had accumulated to a thickness of up to 0.3 m above the original fen surface over a period of 2.5 years), (2) a highly decomposed peat with intact *Phalaris arundinacea* roots taken from –0.05 to –0.2 m depth (hereafter “peat with roots”), and (3) a highly decomposed peat without any fresh plant material taken from –0.1 to –0.2 m depth and with roots removed (hereafter “peat only”). Samples were taken from the same location as for the peat layer incubation in April 2007 (2.5 years after rewetting). The soil depths given refer to the soil surface prior to rewetting to be comparable. Organic sediment and “peat only” were sampled by inserting a plexiglass tube ( $d = 0.13$  m) into the lake bottom, removing the supernatant lake water and obtaining the desired organic substrate. “Peat with roots” was extracted by spade from a place with no overlying organic

sediment and removal of the upper 0.05 m in order to exclude living above-ground plant material. All three substrates were taken from locations under water-saturated soil conditions and therefore we assume that conditions were anaerobic at the start of the subsequent incubation. Each of the three organic substrates was mixed for several minutes by hand and put into the PVC incubation vessels ( $h = 0.35$  m,  $d = 0.15$  m, substrate 0.27 m high,  $\sim 0.005$  m<sup>3</sup>, 3 replicates each). Subsamples of the substrates were taken directly after sampling for chemical characterization (see below). Multi-chamber dialysis samplers were inserted into the upper 10 cm of the soil columns to investigate pore water chemistry (for details see Zak et al., 2010). In addition, silicone probes were inserted at a depth of approximately 0.23 m in the substrate to determine gas concentrations within the substrates (see below). Lake water from the sampling site was added until the substrates were completely covered in order to maintain anaerobic conditions. The incubation vessels were closed with gas-tight lids equipped with ports for gas measurements and incubated at a constant temperature of  $15 \pm 1$  °C under dark conditions for 53 days.

The carbon dioxide and methane fluxes from the sediment or peat substrates were determined with a steady state flow-through chamber system combined with automated gas analysis equipment. A constant air flow of  $6 \times 10^{-3}$  m<sup>3</sup> h<sup>-1</sup> was adjusted in the open headspace of the incubation vessels. The measurements of the inflow/outflow (ambient air/headspace air) concentrations was carried out continuously over the entire incubation period. The gas concentrations were analyzed by a photoacoustic infra-red multi-gas monitor (INNOVA 1312, INNOVA AirTech Instruments, Ballerup, Denmark). Since the gas monitor does not fully compensate for cross-interference of CH<sub>4</sub> and water vapour at high concentrations, the air was partially dried at 5 °C by a gas conditioning system (Rosemount) to reduce water vapour concentrations before measurement. The measurement frequency was three times per hour per incubation vessel with three replications each.

Gas fluxes related to carbon content of the sediment or peat substrate and time (mg C d<sup>-1</sup> kg<sup>-1</sup> C) were calculated according to Eq. (2):

$$\text{emission rate} = \frac{M \times p \times v}{R \times T \times A} \times \frac{dc}{Ct} \quad (2)$$

in which  $M$  is the atomic mass of carbon,  $p$  is the air pressure,  $v$  the air flow,  $R$  the gas constant,  $T$  the temperature,  $A$  the area of the incubation vessel,  $dc$  the difference of gas concentrations, and  $Ct$  is the carbon content of the peat substrate.

As a further indicator for the intensity of the gas production processes, CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> concentrations in the pore water of the substrates were determined using adapted silicone probes according to Kammann et al. (2001). A silicone probe consisted of a curled-up silicone tube (OD = 8 mm, ID = 6 mm,  $L = 1.0$  m) connected with a stainless steel capil-

lary tube (OD = 1.6 mm, ID = 0.75 mm,  $L = 0.32$  and 0.21 m) and a 3-port-valve at each end as well as an injection port at one end. Gas exchange takes place between the interior space of the probe and the substrate only by diffusion through the walls of the silicone tube until equilibrium is reached. Gases within the silicone tube reached 95 % equilibrium with the surrounding atmosphere within several hours (Kammann et al., 2001).

For sampling, the air in the silicone tube was moved to the end with the injection port by inserting water into the silicone probe and taking a gas sample using a gas-tight syringe. Silicone probe samples were diluted with N<sub>2</sub> to concentrations which were in the measurement range of the GC, filled into evacuated 100 ml glass flasks and analyzed with the gas chromatograph (Shimadzu GC-14B, ECD for CO<sub>2</sub>, FID for CH<sub>4</sub>) (Loftfield et al., 1997). After sampling, the water and air in the silicone probes were removed and the probes flushed with N<sub>2</sub> to ensure anaerobic conditions. Samples were taken in 1 to 11 days intervals.

For the analysis of pore water chemistry, the dialysis samplers were removed at the end of incubation, cleaned with deionized water, and the water of the soil chambers was obtained using pipettes. The pore water was analyzed for pH, redox potential, soluble reactive phosphorus (SRP) and Fe and Ca concentrations as described above.

For solid C and N analysis, subsamples of the substrates were taken prior to incubation, sediment/peat substrates and plant material were separated by sieving (2 mm), dried at 40 °C (sediment/peat substrate) or 70 °C (plant material) for 5 days, ground and then analyzed (Elementar CN analyzer vario MAX; combustion at 1100 °C; thermal conductivity detector). Measured solid C and N values for the sediment/peat substrates were corrected for water content when dried at 105 °C.

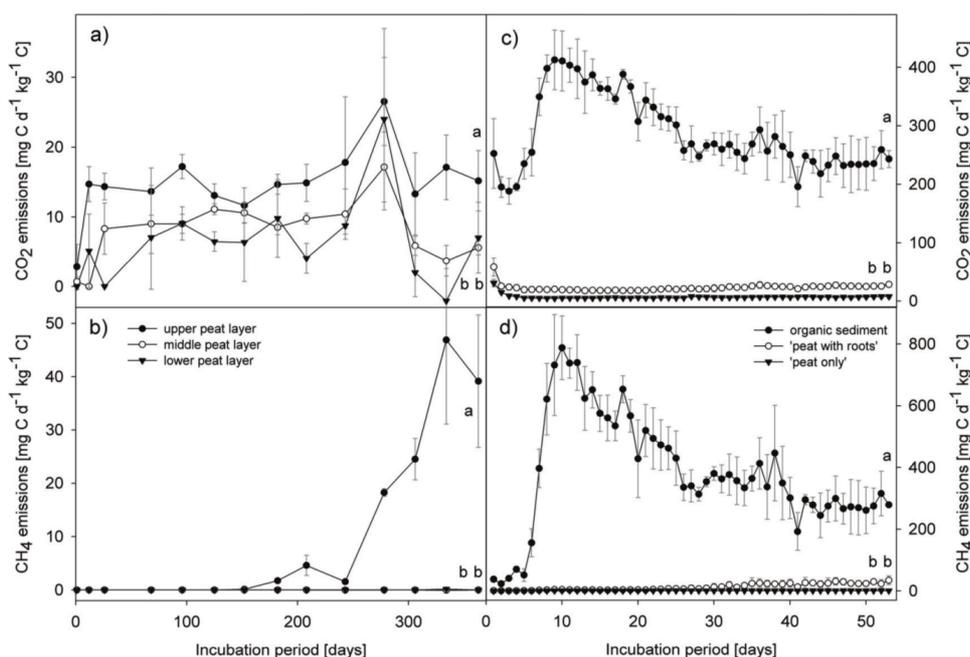
### 2.3 Statistics

Repeated measures analysis of variance by fitting linear mixed-effects models with Tukey post-hoc comparisons were performed with R 2.10.0 (R, 2009) to compare the time series of gas emissions (significance level of  $p < 0.001$ ). SPSS 17.0 was used for one-way ANOVA and Tukey post-hoc comparisons to compare means of pore water chemistry analysis and cumulative gas fluxes (significance level of  $p < 0.05$ ).

## 3 Results

### 3.1 Peat layer incubation

The lowest carbon content and the highest nitrogen and phosphorus contents were found in the uppermost peat layer compared to underlying peat samples (see Table 1). Consequently, lowest C:N and C:P ratios – both indicators for substrate degradability – were observed in the upper peat layer



**Fig. 1.** CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emissions from the surface for the peat layer incubation (**a**, **b**) and for the organic substrate incubation (**c**, **d**) at constant temperature (20 °C and 15 °C) (mean ± SD, *n* = 3; different letters on the left indicate significant differences, *p* < 0.001).

(12 and 320), whereas the lower peat layer had the highest values (18 and 1550).

In accordance with the peat characteristics, peat samples from different horizons differed significantly in their CO<sub>2</sub> emissions ( $F_{2,6} = 12.6$ ,  $p = 0.0072$ ). Anaerobic CO<sub>2</sub> production was highest ( $p < 0.001$ ) at the top of the soil profile. A strong increase in CO<sub>2</sub> production in the upper peat layer was found during the first 14 incubation days and, after approximately 150 days, emission rates increased until day 278 (see Fig. 1a). Anaerobic CO<sub>2</sub> production in the middle peat layer was lower than in the upper peat layer but little higher than in the lower peat layer. In the middle peat layer, an increase in anaerobic CO<sub>2</sub> production was detected two weeks later than in the upper peat layer. It stayed relatively stable thereafter and decreased at the end of incubation. In the lower peat layer, anaerobic CO<sub>2</sub> production showed some fluctuations over the entire incubation period. The cumulative CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes over 363 days for the incubation of the material from the upper peat layer were 1.7 times higher than for the incubation of the material from the middle peat layer and 2.3 times higher than for the incubation of the material from the lower peat layer (see Table 4).

CH<sub>4</sub> emissions from the middle and lower peat layer were zero over the entire incubation period. The upper peat layer emitted no CH<sub>4</sub> until day 152. From day 243 onwards, CH<sub>4</sub> emissions increased strongly and reached a plateau at the end of incubation (maximum of 46.9 mg C d<sup>-1</sup> kg<sup>-1</sup> C

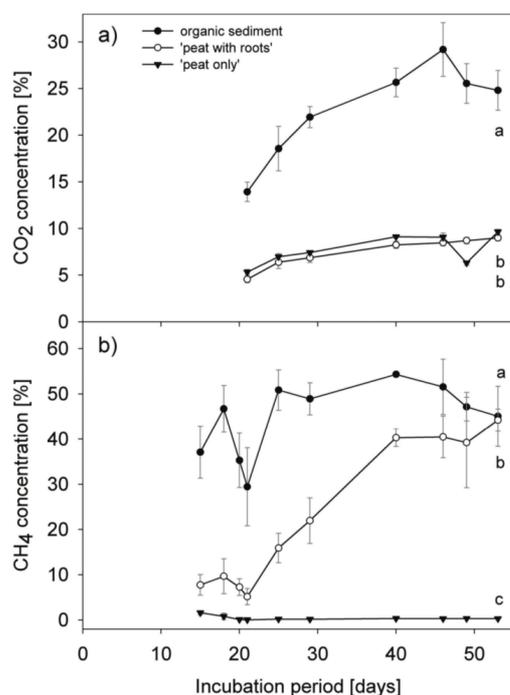
(see Fig. 1b). Cumulative CH<sub>4</sub> fluxes over 363 days were 3.4 g C kg<sup>-1</sup> C in the upper peat layer and around zero for the middle and lower peat layer.

During the 363 incubation days, a small fraction of the initial C in the soil organic matter was respired as CO<sub>2</sub> or CH<sub>4</sub> (Table 4), e.g. from the upper peat layer only 0.55 % and 0.4 % of the initial C were respired as CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub>.

The experimental rewetting caused a reduction in the redox potential and an increase in pH in all treatments (see Table 3). Sulfate concentrations were generally high at the beginning of the rewetting period. In the upper peat layer, sulfate concentrations decreased rapidly during the first weeks of incubation and stayed around 0.1 mM after day 125 (see Fig. 3). Sulfate concentrations decreased slowly in the middle peat layer but increased in the lower peat layer over the entire incubation period. Fe concentrations increased strongly in the upper peat layer and to a much smaller extent in the middle peat layer. In the lower peat layer, Fe concentrations in the pore water were low overall and showed only a marginal increase over time. The highest concentrations of soluble reactive phosphorus (SRP), ammonium, dissolved inorganic and organic carbon, and calcium were generally found in the pore water of the upper peat layer. These concentrations were 2 to 200 times higher than in underlying peat (Table 3, for single results see Zak and Gelbrecht, 2007).

M. Hahn-Schöfl et al.: CH<sub>4</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from degraded fen

1545

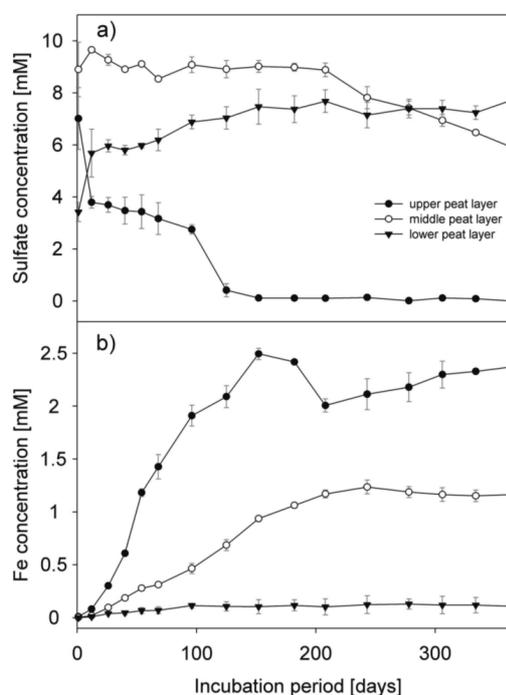


**Fig. 2.** Organic substrate incubation: CO<sub>2</sub> (a) and CH<sub>4</sub> (b) concentrations in the silicone probes over a 53-day period at constant temperature of 15 °C (mean ± SD, *n* = 3). Three organic substrates (organic sediment, “peat with roots” and “peat only”) taken from the uppermost peat layer are compared (different letters indicate significant differences, *p* < 0.001, 1 % = 10 000 ppm).

### 3.2 Organic substrate incubation

The C and N content were determined separately for the <2 mm fraction of the sediment/peat and the plant material. The C content of the sediment/peat was surprisingly low in the organic sediment and in the “peat with roots” but three times higher in the “peat only” (see Table 1). This fact was explained by sand present in the organic sediment and “peat with roots” samples. The sand intrusion is due to erosion from an adjacent bank built for agricultural machinery. All three sediment/peat substrates had similar C:N ratios, those of the plant material in the organic sediment and the “peat with roots” were three times higher (Table 1).

The differences in CO<sub>2</sub> emissions between the three sediment/peat substrates were much more pronounced than for the peat layer incubation ( $F_{2,6} = 600.5$ , *p* < 0.0001, see Fig. 1c). Anaerobic CO<sub>2</sub> production was highest in the organic sediment, with a strong increase at the beginning of incubation (maximum of 412 mg C d<sup>-1</sup> kg<sup>-1</sup> C) and a continuous decline after day 8. CO<sub>2</sub> production in the “peat with roots” was more than 10 times lower than in the organic sediment (*p* < 0.001) and increased slowly over the incubation period (range of 17–28 mg C d<sup>-1</sup> kg<sup>-1</sup> C). In the “peat only”,



**Fig. 3.** Peat layer incubation: Sulfate (a) and iron (b) concentrations in the pore water of the upper, middle and lower peat layer over the 363-day incubation period (mean ± SD, *n* = 3).

CO<sub>2</sub> emissions were even lower than in the freshly rewetted upper peat layer of the peat profile incubation and stayed in the range of 4–8 mg C d<sup>-1</sup> kg<sup>-1</sup> C over the entire incubation period. Cumulative CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes for 53 days were one order of magnitude higher in the organic sediment than in the “peat with roots” and the “peat only” (see Table 4).

CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations in the substrate pore water sampled via silicone probes (see Fig. 2) were high in all substrates. The release of gas bubbles was observed on several sampling occasions. Analogous to gas emissions from the surface, CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations were significantly higher in the organic sediment and increased strongly over the incubation period until day 46 (up to 29%), with a decrease thereafter. The CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations in “peat with roots” and “peat only” did not differ significantly and increased slowly over time (up to approximately 9%).

With regard to CH<sub>4</sub> production, there were fundamental differences between the three sediment/peat substrates that were incubated (see Fig. 1d). CH<sub>4</sub> emissions from the organic sediment were higher compared to the two other substrates and increased strongly from day 6, reaching a maximum on day 10 (788 mg C d<sup>-1</sup> kg<sup>-1</sup> C), followed by a continuous decrease until the end of incubation. In contrast, the “peat with roots” showed low CH<sub>4</sub> emissions until day 7 and increased slowly thereafter to a maximum of 34 mg C d<sup>-1</sup> kg<sup>-1</sup> C at the end of incubation. Thus, the same

1546

M. Hahn-Schöfl et al.: CH<sub>4</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from degraded fen**Table 3.** Characterization of pore water chemistry for the peat layer incubation and the organic substrate incubation (letters indicate differences between the treatments,  $p < 0.05$ ).

Incubation <sup>z</sup>	pH		Redox potential $E_7$ (V)		SRP ( $\mu\text{M}$ )		NH <sub>4</sub> -N (mM)		Concentrations in the pore water									
	Start	End	Start	End	Start	End	Start	End	Sulfate (mM)		Fe (mM)		Ca (mM)		DIC (mM)		DOC (mM)	
Peat layer incubation																		
Upper peat layer	6.0 <sup>a</sup>	6.7 <sup>a</sup>	0.51 <sup>a</sup>	0.14 <sup>a</sup>	0.13 <sup>a</sup>	144 <sup>a</sup>	0.02 <sup>a</sup>	1.86 <sup>a</sup>	7.01 <sup>a</sup>	0.00 <sup>a</sup>	0.01	2.37 <sup>a</sup>	3.43 <sup>a</sup>	11.9 <sup>a</sup>	2.80 <sup>a</sup>	29.2 <sup>a</sup>	6.58 <sup>a</sup>	44.4 <sup>a</sup>
Middle peat layer	5.9 <sup>a</sup>	6.8 <sup>a</sup>	0.57 <sup>ab</sup>	0.17 <sup>b</sup>	0.13 <sup>a</sup>	0.48 <sup>b</sup>	0.02 <sup>a</sup>	0.35 <sup>b</sup>	8.90 <sup>a</sup>	5.93 <sup>b</sup>	0.00	1.16 <sup>b</sup>	6.93 <sup>b</sup>	12.1 <sup>a</sup>	1.42 <sup>b</sup>	15.1 <sup>b</sup>	4.69 <sup>b</sup>	23.2 <sup>b</sup>
Lower peat layer	5.5 <sup>b</sup>	6.6 <sup>a</sup>	0.59 <sup>b</sup>	0.27 <sup>c</sup>	0.13 <sup>a</sup>	0.68 <sup>b</sup>	0.05 <sup>b</sup>	0.03 <sup>c</sup>	3.42 <sup>b</sup>	7.70 <sup>c</sup>	0.00	0.11 <sup>c</sup>	4.75 <sup>c</sup>	6.45 <sup>b</sup>	0.64 <sup>c</sup>	0.69 <sup>c</sup>	1.49 <sup>c</sup>	1.20 <sup>c</sup>
Organic substrate incubation																		
Organic sediment		6.7 <sup>a</sup>		0.17 <sup>a</sup>		1085 <sup>a</sup>		–		–		0.35 <sup>a</sup>		9.06 <sup>a</sup>		–		–
“Peat with roots”		7.0 <sup>b</sup>		0.18 <sup>a</sup>		35.7 <sup>b</sup>		–		–		1.38 <sup>b</sup>		9.11 <sup>a</sup>		–		–
“Peat only”		6.9 <sup>a</sup>		0.14 <sup>a</sup>		129 <sup>c</sup>		–		–		1.50 <sup>c</sup>		15.3 <sup>b</sup>		–		–

<sup>z</sup> Data given for the peat layer incubation: Start on day 1, End on day 363, further data and details see in Zak and Gelbrecht (2007); in the organic substrate incubation data are available for the end of the incubation (on day 53). Letters a–c indicate significant differences between substrates,  $p < 0.05$ .

level was reached as that found for the upper peat layer in the peat layer incubation (see Fig. 1b), whereas CH<sub>4</sub> emissions from “peat only” stayed low over the entire incubation period ( $< 1 \text{ mg C d}^{-1} \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ C}$ ). Cumulative CH<sub>4</sub> fluxes in the organic sediment were 2–3 orders of magnitude higher than in the “peat with roots” and “peat only” (Table 4).

Fundamental and significant differences between the three organic substrates were also observed for CH<sub>4</sub> concentrations in the silicone probes ( $F_{2,6} = 246.1$ ,  $p < 0.0001$ , see Fig. 2). CH<sub>4</sub> concentrations were highest in the organic sediment where they remained relatively constant after day 25 (range of 45–54%). In contrast, in the “peat with roots” CH<sub>4</sub> concentrations started low but increased strongly from day 21 onwards until they reached the same level as the organic sediment at the end of incubation. CH<sub>4</sub> concentrations in the “peat only” were lower than in the other two organic substrates (maximum of 1.6% at the start of incubation) and even decreased over the incubation period.

Despite the high gas flux rates from the organic sediment, only 3.5% of the initial total carbon was respired as either CO<sub>2</sub> or CH<sub>4</sub> during 53 days of incubation. From “peat with roots” and “peat only” the fraction respired was 1–2 orders of magnitude lower (see Table 4).

Comparing the gas fluxes of the two incubation experiments, the organic sediment emitted most CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> compared to all peat substrates – both peat from different horizons in the peat layer incubation and “peat with roots” and “peat only” in the organic substrate incubation (Fig. 1 and Table 4). The “peat with roots” showed emissions for both gases that were similar to those of the upper peat layer, and emissions from the “peat only” were identical to those of the lower peat layer from the first incubation experiment (see average flux per day in Table 4).

The redox potential (measured at the end of the incubation period) was similar in all three organic substrates (see Table 3). The pH was slightly higher in the “peat with roots”. The concentration of soluble reactive phosphorus (SRP) in the pore water was by far highest in the organic sediment. Fe concentrations were highest in the “peat only” and the “peat with roots” and one order of magnitude lower in the organic sediment. Ca concentration was highest in “peat only” compared to the other two substrates.

#### 4 Discussion

Despite the fact that the two incubations were performed at different temperatures (20 vs. 15 °C), incubation periods (363 vs. 53 days), and time since flooding (immediately after versus 2.5 years later) their respective findings can be regarded as complementary and some general conclusions can be drawn regarding the effect of different kinds of substrates on the anaerobic production of GHGs. The upper peat layer (from peat layer incubation) and the “peat with roots” (from the organic substrate incubation) are comparable substrates, since both consist of highly decomposed peat taken from a depth of –0.1 to –0.2 m with some remaining plant-derived material. Both show similar CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> production rates (Fig. 1 and Table 4).

##### 4.1 Anaerobic CO<sub>2</sub> production – indication of microbial activity

Anaerobic CO<sub>2</sub> production is an indicator for instantaneously available organic substrates from peat and fresh organic matter over a wide range of substances and energetic quality (Freibauer and Augustin, 2009). The organic

**Table 4.** Cumulative CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> fluxes over the incubation period (363 days for peat layer incubation; 53 days for organic substrate incubation), average per day (mean ± SD, *n* = 3), total C in incubation vessels and C respired during incubation (given as total C and in % of total C) (letters indicate differences between the treatments, *p* < 0.05).

	Cumulative flux over entire incubation period		Average flux per day		Total C at incubation start (g C)	Total C respired during incubation (g C)	% of total C respired during incubation	
	CO <sub>2</sub> flux (g C kg <sup>-1</sup> C)	CH <sub>4</sub> flux (g C kg <sup>-1</sup> C)	CO <sub>2</sub> flux (g C d <sup>-1</sup> kg <sup>-1</sup> C)	CH <sub>4</sub> flux (g C d <sup>-1</sup> kg <sup>-1</sup> C)			as CO <sub>2</sub> (%)	as CH <sub>4</sub> (%)
Peat layer incubation (363 days)								
Upper peat layer	5.5 (± 0.8) <sup>a</sup>	3.4 (± 0.4) <sup>a</sup>	0.02 (± 0)	0.01 (± 0)	4500	40.2 (± 5)	0.55	0.34
Middle peat layer	3.2 (± 0.4) <sup>b</sup>	0 <sup>b</sup>	0.01 (± 0)	0	3500	11.1 (± 1.3)	0.32	0
Lower peat layer	2.4 (± 1.3) <sup>b</sup>	0 <sup>b</sup>	0.01 (± 0)	0	2500	5.9 (± 3.2)	0.24	0
Organic substrate incubation (53 days)								
Organic sediment	15.2 (± 1) <sup>a</sup>	20.3 (± 2.3) <sup>a</sup>	0.3 (± 0.02)	0.4 (± 0.04)	126 <sup>z</sup>	4.5 (± 0.4)	1.52	2.03
“Peat with roots”	1.2 (± 0.1) <sup>b</sup>	0.7 (± 0.3) <sup>b</sup>	0.02 (± 0)	0.01 (± 0)	296 <sup>z</sup>	0.6 (± 0.1)	0.12	0.07
“Peat only”	0.4 (± 0.1) <sup>b</sup>	0.03 (± 0) <sup>b</sup>	0.01 (± 0)	0	613 <sup>z</sup>	0.2 (± 0.03)	0.04	0.003

<sup>z</sup> Estimated.

sediment consisted mainly of fresh plant litter mixed with sand, and microbial degradation emitting CO<sub>2</sub> was, as hypothesized, substantially higher than in the other organic substrates (see Fig. 1c and Table 4). CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from the surface of the organic sediment showed a substrate-limited reaction (hyperbolic function with two parameters;  $R^2 = 0.87$ ; Paul and Clark, 1996) from day 9 onwards. The gas accumulated in the substrate matrix, as demonstrated by the gas concentrations in silicone probes (up to 29 % CO<sub>2</sub> in the organic sediment, see Fig. 2). In all other substrates with peat from both experiments, specific rates of anaerobic CO<sub>2</sub> production were significantly lower. However, significant differences were also recorded between these substrates (Fig. 1). The upper part of the peat profile released significantly more CO<sub>2</sub> than peat from deeper down the profile. This could be due to some residual fresh plant-derived material (e.g. from rhizodeposition) which was presumably present in the uppermost peat layer and which could not be removed entirely before incubation. In the situation in which fresh plant roots were present in the peat substrate (“peat with roots”), microbial degradation processes releasing CO<sub>2</sub> were more active compared to peat without fresh organic matter (“peat only”). However, the differences were not statistically significant (see Fig. 1c). Anaerobic decomposition depleting “labile” substrates could have occurred 2.5 years longer in the peat in the organic substrate incubation. Despite this fact, CO<sub>2</sub> production in “peat only” (taken 2.5 years after rewetting) was in the same range than those in the lower peat layer and “peat with roots” was comparable to maximum CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from the upper peat layer.

These findings are in accordance with those of another study which reported rates of CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> production that were generally greatest in the surface peat where a strong cover of vegetation had developed and the content of fresh or

slightly decomposed plant litter was highest (Glatzel et al., 2004). This suggests that it is the availability of readily degradable plant material that determines CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> production rates, whereupon it only accounts for a small fraction of the total C pool. In our study, only 0.9 % of the initially existing C from the upper peat layer and 3.5 % from the organic sediment were lost as CO<sub>2</sub> or CH<sub>4</sub> (see Table 4). Kiikkilä et al. (2011) showed that dissolved organic carbon (DOC) derived from fresh plant material was clearly more degradable and contained a greater amount of labile compounds than DOC derived from the humus layer of a forest soil. Cumulative CO<sub>2</sub>-loss from forest humus DOC was up to 21 % and was twofold from plant DOC in a 110 days incubation.

Anaerobic CO<sub>2</sub> production depends not only on the availability of labile organic substrates but also on the availability of oxidizing substances such as nitrate, ferric iron and sulfate. The concentration of nitrate in the pore water was low throughout the incubation (data not shown). The strong increase in iron concentrations and the depletion of sulfate in the pore water of the upper peat layer indicated that an excess of labile organic substances were available there, in contrast to peat deeper down the profile (Fig. 3). Microbial activity was lower in the middle and lower peat layer as there was a lack of suitable substrate for degradation processes due to the absence of fresh material and the humified nature of the peat. Hence, sulfate concentrations in the pore water decreased only slowly or even increased (see Fig. 3 or Table 3), and favourable conditions for CH<sub>4</sub> production were not established throughout incubation.

1548

M. Hahn-Schöfl et al.: CH<sub>4</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from degraded fen

#### 4.2 Onset of methanogenesis and magnitude of CH<sub>4</sub> emissions

The production of CH<sub>4</sub> indicates the instantaneous availability of fresh and energy-rich substrates, and it often decreases with depth as does the availability of organic matter (Segers, 1998).

CH<sub>4</sub> emissions from the upper peat layer started after a 182-day lag-phase. This retarded onset of methanogenic activity, as well as the zero CH<sub>4</sub> emissions from the middle and lower peat layer, can be explained by competition for organic substrates with iron or sulfate reducers. Thus, it took 125 incubation days before sulfate was almost completely gone (see Fig. 3) and methanogenesis started in the upper peat layer (see Fig. 1b). Therefore, we assume that methanogens were inhibited by competition with iron-reducing or sulfate-reducing bacteria (Smolders et al., 2002). The slow recovery of methanogenesis during the first weeks under waterlogged conditions in the upper peat layer could also be caused by aerobic conditions in the field before sampling. Aerobiosis could damage a methanogenic population either directly by poisoning or indirectly by C-starvation due to competition for substrates with aerobic microorganisms (Segers, 1998). However, Knorr and Blodau (2009) found that methanogenesis recovered locally quite quickly from aeration. Finally, decomposition of organic matter and subsequent production of GHGs can also be inhibited by the presence of organic electron acceptors such as humic substances (Segers, 1998; Blodau, 2002), which might be the case in the humified middle and lower peat layer (Zak and Gelbrecht, 2007).

The substrates used for the organic substrate incubation were under anaerobic conditions in the field for a longer period (waterlogged conditions for 2.5 years). We assume therefore that methanogens were not inhibited by aerobiosis in this experiment. Conditions favourable for methanogenesis were established quickly in the organic sediment with its large amount of labile, fresh plant material. Here, CH<sub>4</sub> emissions started immediately, increased rapidly and were extremely high. From day 10 onwards, CH<sub>4</sub> production showed a substrate-limited reaction (hyperbolic function with two parameters;  $R^2=0.89$ ; Paul and Clark, 1996).

In accordance with the substantially lower release of GHGs, the microbial degradation of organic matter was significantly lower in the two peat substrates (“peat with roots” and “peat only”). However, differences in decomposition rates could also clearly be seen between these substrates. Microbial activity in the “peat with roots” with its fresh root material was generally higher and methanogenesis started quickly and increased continuously until the end of incubation. The CH<sub>4</sub> formed was not emitted continuously through the surface but accumulated in the substrate up to concentrations of 44%, as shown by the silicone probe results (see Fig. 2). This finding indicates that CH<sub>4</sub> production in the peat was higher than detected in the surface emissions. The

“peat only” – consisting of peat substrate without any fresh organic matter – showed, as anticipated, very low microbial decomposition and methanogenesis stayed very low over the entire incubation period (Figs. 1d and 2).

Our findings confirm the results by Tuittila et al. (2000), who observed extremely low CH<sub>4</sub> emissions from highly decomposed bog peat at an abandoned cut-away site and emphasized the importance of fresh plant litter and root exudates as substrates for methanogenesis. A pulse-labeling experiment showed that recently-assimilated carbon was translocated to the roots and available to soil microbial community as root exudates and emitted as CH<sub>4</sub> quickly (King and Reeburgh, 2002). The low availability of appropriate organic substrate for methanogens caused the lack of CH<sub>4</sub> production from a Dutch cut-over bog remnant; peat with relatively low lignin and phenolic content, and with a low C:N, C:P and C:K ratio had a higher potential for CH<sub>4</sub> production (Smolders et al., 2002). The highest rates of anaerobic CH<sub>4</sub> production occurred in samples close to the soil surface with fresh peat accumulation and a high water table (Glatzel et al., 2004). The largest anaerobic CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> production were found in peat samples close to the soil surface (Reiche et al., 2010). Our findings show that it is not the quality of the bulk peat substrate itself but the presence of fresh organic matter that determines anaerobic GHG production.

Plants no longer growing on a site can be an important control of CH<sub>4</sub> production rates – the highest CH<sub>4</sub> production occurred at a bog site where sedges had been growing in the recent past and the decomposition of sedge residues in the peat below the surface supported CH<sub>4</sub> production (Yavitt et al., 1997). Field measurements on our sampling site revealed extremely high CH<sub>4</sub> emissions (up to 205 g C m<sup>-2</sup> yr<sup>-1</sup>) in the years following rewetting (Chojnicki et al., 2007; Höper et al., 2008). The reed canary grass (*Phalaris arundinacea*) at the Zarnekow site – due to its high productivity even under flooded conditions – produced, prior to its dying-off during the first year of inundation, a sufficiently large C pool for CH<sub>4</sub> production (accumulation of 650 g C m<sup>-2</sup> yr<sup>-1</sup>). The main part thereof was presumably transferred to the organic sediment layer. In addition, the substrate pool is assumed to be continuously refilled with labile organic matter by litter from submerged macrophytes and helophytes from the nearby littoral zone under the prevailing eutrophic and inundated conditions.

## 5 Conclusions

Although laboratory incubations are not considered suitable for assessing the actual relevance of peatlands as a source or sink for CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub>, they can be used as an indicator for the production potential of CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> in a certain substrate.

Depending on drainage and land use history after rewetting of fens, highly eutrophic shallow lakes can be formed. The bottom of these lakes is typically characterized by highly

decomposed peat layers at the top and less decomposed peat layers up to several metres below. The original grassland vegetation is not adapted to inundated conditions and therefore dies back, forming an organic sediment layer. This fresh organic substrate has an extremely high potential for CH<sub>4</sub> production. Consequently, the release of CH<sub>4</sub> could be high at least as long as eutrophic and inundated conditions last.

In contrast, pure peat without fresh plant-derived material seems to be relatively inert. Significant methane emissions cannot be expected from pure peat layers under permanently inundated conditions in the field as long as readily degradable substances are lacking.

To some extent, GHG production may occur when some labile organic matter is available, e.g. from rhizodeposition or fresh litter from plant roots. However, depending on the availability of alternative electron acceptors (e.g. iron and sulfate), CH<sub>4</sub> production will start after an extended lag-phase, and the available C pool is more limited than in the newly formed sediment layer.

The risk of high CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emissions after restoration is limited to waterlogged conditions and the simultaneous presence of readily degradable and energy-rich substrates for microbial decomposition processes (i.e. eutrophic peat, fresh plant litter, or newly formed organic sediments, e.g. from plants that are not adapted to flooding). In the future, it should be investigated if the expected colonization of flooded areas by adapted plant species such as *Typha* sp., reeds or sedges might also reduce this potential risk as their litter is slowly decomposed (Brinson et al., 1981).

**Acknowledgements.** We are grateful to Susan Trumbore from the Max Planck Institute for Biogeochemistry for critically revising the draft. We wish to thank Bodo Grossmann (Leibniz Centre for Agricultural Landscape Research) for his excellent technical assistance in gas analysis. Funding for this research was provided by the Federal Ministry of Education and Research (BMBF) through the integrative project “Climate mitigation via peatland management” (FKZ 01LS05051) and by the Landesamt für Umwelt, Naturschutz und Geologie Mecklenburg-Vorpommern (“Emission klimarelevanter Spurengase aus wiedervernässten Mooren im Peenetal”, LUNG 230-5325.60-7-35).

The service charges for this open access publication have been covered by the Max Planck Society.

Edited by: A. Neftel

## References

- Alm, J., Shurpali, N. J., Minkinen, K., Aro, L., Hytönen, J., Laurila, T., Lohila, A., Maljanen, M., Martikainen, P. J., Mäkiranta, P., Penttilä, T., Saarnio, S., Silvan, N., Tuittila, E. S., and Laine, J.: Emission factors and their uncertainty for the exchange of CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O in Finnish managed peatlands, *Boreal Environ. Res.*, 12, 191–209, 2007.
- Augustin, J.: Emission, Aufnahme und Klimarelevanz von Spurengasen, in: *Landschaftsökologische Moorkunde*, 2 Edn., edited by: Joosten, H. and Succow, M., Schweizerbart'sche Verlagsbuchhandlung, Stuttgart, 28–37, 2001.
- Blodau, C.: Carbon cycling in peatlands – a review of processes and controls, *Environ. Rev.*, 10, 111–134, doi:10.1139/A02-004, 2002.
- Brinson, M. M., Lugo, A. E., and Brown, S.: Primary productivity, decomposition, and consumer activity in freshwater wetlands., *Annu. Rev. Ecol. Syst.*, 12, 123–161, 1981.
- Chojnicki, B. H., Augustin, J., and Olejnik, J.: Impact of reflooding on greenhouse gas exchange of degraded fen peatlands, in: *Proceedings of the 1<sup>st</sup> International Symposium on Carbon in Peatlands*, Wageningen, The Netherlands, 15–18 April 2007, 2007.
- Clymo, R. S.: The limits to peat bog growth, *Philos. T. Roy. Soc. B*, 303, 605–654, 1984.
- Conrad, R.: Control of methane production in terrestrial ecosystems, in: *Exchange of Trace Gases Between Terrestrial Ecosystems and the Atmosphere*, edited by: Andrea, M. O. and Schimel, D. S., Wiley, New York, 39–58, 1989.
- Drösler, M.: Trace gas exchange and climatic relevance of bog ecosystems, Southern Germany, PhD thesis, Chair of Vegetation Ecology, Department of Ecology, Technical University Munich, 179 pp., 2005.
- Drösler, M., Freibauer, A., Christensen, T. R., and Friborg, T.: Observations and status of peatland greenhouse gas emissions in Europe, in: *The Continental-Scale Greenhouse Gas Balance of Europe*, edited by: Dolman, V. A. F., Springer, New York, p. 387, 2008.
- Freibauer, A. and Augustin, J.: Interactive comment on “Effect of peat quality on microbial greenhouse gas formation in an acidic fen” by M. Reiche et al., *Biogeosciences Discussions*, 6, C2593–C2601, available at: <http://www.biogeosciences-discuss.net/6/C2593/2009/>, 2009.
- Glatzel, S., Basiliko, N., and Moore, T.: Carbon dioxide and methane production potentials of peat from natural, harvested and restored sites, *Wetlands*, 24, 261–267, 2004.
- Gorham, E.: Northern peatlands: role in the carbon cycle and probable responses to climatic warming, *Ecol. Appl.*, 1, 182–195, 1991.
- Hendriks, D. M. D., van Huissteden, J., Dolman, A. J., and van der Molen, M. K.: The full greenhouse gas balance of an abandoned peat meadow, *Biogeosciences*, 4, 411–424, doi:10.5194/bg-4-411-2007, 2007.
- Houghton, J. T., Jenkins, G. J., and Ephraums, J. J.: *Climate Change, The IPCC Scientific Assessment*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 410 pp., [www.ipcc.ch/publications\\_and\\_data/publications\\_ipcc\\_first\\_assessment\\_1990\\_wg1.shtml](http://www.ipcc.ch/publications_and_data/publications_ipcc_first_assessment_1990_wg1.shtml), 1990.
- Höper, H., Augustin, J., Cagampan, J. P., Drösler, M., Lundin, L., Moors, E., Vasander, H., Waddington, J. M., and Wilson, D.: Restoration of peatlands and greenhouse gas balances, in: *Peatlands and Climate Change*, edited by: Strack, M., International Peat Society, Jyväskylä, 182–210, 2008.
- Joosten, H. and Succow, M.: Hydrogenetische Moortypen, in: *Landschaftsökologische Moorkunde*, 2 Edn., edited by: Joosten, H. and Succow, M., Schweizerbart'sche Verlagsbuchhandlung, Stuttgart, 234–240, 2001.
- Juutinen, S., Larmola, T., Remus, R., Mirus, E., Merbach, W., Silvola, J., and Augustin, J.: The contribution of *Phrag-*

1550

M. Hahn-Schöfl et al.: CH<sub>4</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from degraded fen

- mites australis* litter to methane (CH<sub>4</sub>) emission in planted and non-planted fen microcosms, *Biol. Fert. Soils*, 38, 10–14, doi:10.1007/s00374-003-0618-1, 2003.
- Kammann, C., Grünhage, L., and Jäger, H. J.: A new sampling technique to monitor concentrations of CH<sub>4</sub>, N<sub>2</sub>O and CO<sub>2</sub> in air at well-defined depths in soils with varied water potential, *Eur. J. Soil Sci.*, 52, 297–303, 2001.
- Kiikkilä, O., Kitunen, V., and Smolander, A.: Properties of dissolved organic matter derived from silver birch and Norway spruce stands: Degradability combined with chemical characteristics. *Soil Biol. Biochem.*, 43, 421–430, 2011.
- King, J. Y. and Reeburgh, W. S.: A pulse-labeling experiment to determine the contribution of recent plant photosynthates to net methane emission in arctic wet sedge tundra, *Soil Biol. Biochem.*, 34, 173–180, 2002.
- Knorr, K. H. and Blodau, C.: Impact of experimental drought and rewetting on redox transformations and methanogenesis in mesocosms of a northern fen soil, *Soil Biol. Biochem.*, 41, 1187–1198, doi:10.1016/j.soilbio.2009.02.030, 2009.
- Lenschow, U., Jeschke, L., Zscheile, K. H., and Ziese, B.: Geologie und Landschaftsgeschichte Mecklenburg-Vorpommerns, in: *Die Naturschutzgebiete in Mecklenburg-Vorpommern*, Demmler Verlag GmbH, Schwerin, p. 713, 2003.
- Lofftfield, N., Flessa, H., Augustin, J., and Beese, F.: Automated gas chromatographic system for rapid analysis of the atmospheric trace gases methane, carbon dioxide, and nitrous oxide, *J. Environ. Qual.*, 26, 560–564, 1997.
- Nykanen, H., Alm, J., Silvola, J., Tolonen, K., and Martikainen, P. J.: Methane fluxes on boreal peatlands of different fertility and the effect of long-term experimental lowering of the water table on flux rates, *Global Biogeochem. Cy.*, 12, 53–69, 1998.
- Okruszko, H.: Influence of hydrological differentiation of fens on their transformation after dehydration and on possibilities for restoration, in: *Restoration of Temperate Wetlands*, edited by: Wheeler, B. D., Shaw, S. C., Fojt, W. J., and Robertson, R. A., Wiley, Chichester, UK, 113–119, 1995.
- Paul, E. A. and Clark, F. E.: Soil organic matter turnover: pool sizes and reaction kinetics, in: *Soil Microbiology and Biochemistry*, 2 Edn., edited by: Paul, E. A. and Clark, F. E., Academic Press, San Diego, CA, USA, 1996.
- Puustjärvi, V.: Degree of humification, *Peat Plant News*, 3, 48–52, 1970.
- R: A Language and Environment for Statistical Computing, R Development Core Team, R Foundation for Statistical Computing, Vienna, Austria, 2009.
- Reiche, M., Gleixner, G., and Küsel, K.: Effect of peat quality on microbial greenhouse gas formation in an acidic fen, *Biogeosciences*, 7, 187–198, doi:10.5194/bg-7-187-2010, 2010.
- Schinner, F.: Bodenatmung, in: *Bodenbiologische Arbeitsmethoden*, edited by: Schinner, F., Öhlinger, R., Kandeler, E., and Margesin, R., Springer, Berlin, Heidelberg, 84–86, 1993.
- Segers, R.: Methane production and methane consumption: a review of processes underlying wetland methane fluxes, *Biogeochemistry*, 41, 23–51, 1998.
- Smolders, A. J. P., Tomassen, H. B. M., Lamers, L. P. M., Lomans, B. P., and Roelofs, J. G. M.: Peat bog restoration by floating raft formation: the effects of groundwater and peat quality, *J. Appl. Ecol.*, 39, 391–401, 2002.
- Tuittila, E. S., Komulainen, V. M., Vasander, H., Nykanen, H., Martikainen, P. J., and Laine, J.: Methane dynamics of a restored cut-away peatland, *Glob. Change Biol.*, 6, 569–581, 2000.
- Umweltbundesamt: Nationaler Inventarbericht zum Deutschen Treibhausgasinventar 1990–2007, Umweltbundesamt, Dessau, 575 pp., 2009.
- Wilson, D., Alm, J., Laine, J., Byrne, K. A., Farrell, E. P., and Tuittila, E. S.: Rewetting of cutaway peatlands: are we re-creating hot spots of methane emissions?, *J. Soc. Ecol. Restor. Int.*, 17, 796–806, doi:10.1111/j.1526-100X.2008.00416.x, 2008.
- Yavitt, J. B., Williams, C. J., and Wieder, R. K.: Production of methane and carbon dioxide in peatland ecosystems across North America: effects of temperature, aeration, and organic chemistry of peat, *Geomicrobiol. J.*, 14, 299–316, 1997.
- Zak, D. and Gelbrecht, J.: The mobilisation of phosphorus, organic carbon and ammonium in the initial stage of fen rewetting (a case study from NE Germany), *Biogeochemistry*, 85, 141–151, doi:10.1007/s10533-007-9122-2, 2007.
- Zak, D., Gelbrecht, J., Wagner, C., and Steinberg, C. E. W.: Evaluation of phosphorus mobilisation potential in rewetted fens by an improved sequential chemical extraction procedure, *Eur. J. Soil Sci.*, 59, 1191–1201, doi:10.1111/j.1365-2389.2008.01081.x, 2008.
- Zak, D., Wagner, C., Payer, B., Augustin, J., and Gelbrecht, J.: Phosphorus mobilization in rewetted fens: the effect of altered peat properties and implications for their restoration, *Ecol. Appl.*, 20, 1336–1349, doi:10.1890/08-2053, 2010.

## Chapter 3: Publication II

### Experimental rewetting of peat grasslands: critical water table thresholds for greenhouse gas emissions and vegetation responses

*authors:*

M. Hahn-Schöfl<sup>1</sup>, A. Thuille<sup>1</sup>, G. Schöfl<sup>2</sup>, A. Freibauer<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Max Planck Institute for Biogeochemistry, Hans-Knöll-Strasse 10, D-07745 Jena

<sup>2</sup> DKMS Life Science Lab GmbH, Blasewitzerstrasse 43, D-01037 Dresden

<sup>3</sup> Thünen Institute of Climate-Smart Agriculture, Bundesallee 50, D-38116 Braunschweig

*status:*

draft manuscript, submission planned

*own contributions:*

- design and implementation of experimental set-up
- design and construction of all devices
- calculation of CO<sub>2</sub> flux rates from raw data
- modelling of daily CO<sub>2</sub> flux rates
- statistical analysis of all data
- graphical presentation
- data interpretation and discussion of results
- planning and writing of the publication

*contributions by co-authors:*

- supervision of the experiment during maternity leave of M. Hahn-Schöfl (A. Thuille)
- calculation of CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O flux rates from raw data (A. Thuille)
- development of a procedure for CO<sub>2</sub> flux calculation from raw data (G. Schöfl)
- support in development of linear mixed effects models for GHG flux data (G. Schöfl)
- supervision of PhD thesis (A. Freibauer)

## Abstract

The rewetting of formerly drained peat grasslands is considered as an effective measure to reduce greenhouse gas (GHG) emissions and is already implemented in Germany. Deliberately raising the water table re-establishes water saturated conditions, principally reduces CO<sub>2</sub> emissions but might unintentionally boost CH<sub>4</sub> formation. A water table for optimum net GHG balance must aim to minimize peat mineralization but also to avoid high methane and nitrous oxide release. In order to investigate the functional role of the water table position on GHG fluxes (CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O) we performed an incubation experiment under controlled environmental conditions simulating gradual rewetting and prolonged flooding of fen mesocosms with intact vegetation.

Gradually raising the water table from -30 cm up to 0 cm reduced vegetation vitality and increased net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake due to reduced gross primary production (GPP) and ecosystem respiration (R<sub>eco</sub>). CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions were low. In summary, gradual rewetting had a positive climate impact – net GHG uptake increased by 0.6 (sedges) to 0.8 (grasses) g CO<sub>2</sub>-equivalents m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> per cm water table raise. In contrast, raising the water table above the peat surface (+5 cm) caused a partial dying-off of the grassland vegetation, significantly reduced GPP and simultaneously increased R<sub>eco</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emissions as a consequence of higher substrate availability. In grasses, flooding nearly cancelled the positive climatic effect as the lower net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake was more than compensated by CH<sub>4</sub> emissions in terms of CO<sub>2</sub>-equivalents. In sedges, CH<sub>4</sub> never risked to compensate the net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake – the positive climatic effect was halved after flooding. The most favourable water table positions for minimal GHG fluxes range from -10 cm to 0 cm. Under wet conditions, sedges did not boost CH<sub>4</sub> emissions but stabilized the redox potential so that CH<sub>4</sub> production occurred later and was lower compared to grasses.

## 1. Introduction

Natural peatlands act as a sink for atmospheric carbon dioxide (CO<sub>2</sub>) but are, simultaneously, a source of methane (CH<sub>4</sub>) as the water table is near the land surface. Conversion of peatlands to human uses changes the hydrology and plant community and consequently, carbon and nutrient cycling and GHG emissions (Drösler et al. 2008; Laine et al. 2009). Water table position has been identified as the most important determinant of CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> and nitrous oxide (N<sub>2</sub>O) fluxes (Augustin 2001; Jungkunst et al. 2008) in hydromorphic soils. If the aerobic peat layer is enlarged by drainage, peat mineralization and consequently CO<sub>2</sub> production is stimulated but CH<sub>4</sub> formation decreases. Deeply drained peat soils as found under agricultural management shift from a carbon sink to a carbon source (Drösler et al. 2008; Laine et al. 2009).

Rewetting former drained peat grasslands has therefore been suggested as effective measure to mitigate greenhouse gas (GHG) emissions from peat soils (Hendriks et al. 2007; Beetz et al. 2013). But, rewetting might unintentionally cause a shift from CO<sub>2</sub> towards CH<sub>4</sub>-dominated emissions (Riet et al. 2013). In Germany, peatland restoration via rewetting is implemented with the explicit goal of reducing GHG emissions (Höper et al. 2008). However, restoration is often performed by flooding so that the net GHG effect of reduced peat mineralization and increased methane release remains unclear (Höper 2007). This is due to the fact that flooding can boost CH<sub>4</sub> emissions (Laine et al. 2009), in particular when plants die that are not adapted to excessive water stress (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2011). The optimum water table to minimize the net GHG balance seems to be located around -5 cm (Jungkunst et al. 2008) respectively -10 cm (Drösler et al. 2008) below the soil

surface.

Vegetation composition reacts sensitively to water level changes both by the shift of dominance structures of the different species and by the vitality of the vegetation layer (Drösler et al. 2008). Plants not adapted to wet conditions may die off providing fresh organic matter for decomposition processes (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2011), which is a primary substrate for methanogenesis. In rewetted grassland, the original lowland meadow grasses are replaced by water-tolerant sedges (e.g. Hendriks et al. 2007). Sedges have aerenchyma, which act as chimney for CH<sub>4</sub> in wet conditions. Plant mediated CH<sub>4</sub> transport dominates CH<sub>4</sub> transport in natural peat vegetation communities (Schimel 1995). It remains unclear whether fresh substrate from died-off vegetation or the vegetation shift to sedges produces more CH<sub>4</sub> emissions.

Many field studies have suffered from the seasonal covariance between water table, temperature and vegetation activity so that the functional role of the water table position could not be singled out. Several laboratory experiments have been performed with peat mesocosms under controlled conditions with systematic manipulation of water table, substrate and duration of flooding (Berryman et al. 2009; Reiche et al. 2010; Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2011; Riet et al. 2013). To our knowledge, no incubation study has so far (1) included grassland vegetation before and after shift to wetness-adapted species, (2) simulated real-world conditions in terms of temperature and radiation, and (3) included all three GHG species (CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O), which is a pre-requisite for assessing the full net GHG mitigation effect of peatland rewetting measures. Additionally, laboratory experiments are often performed without accounting for the CO<sub>2</sub> fixation by vegetation (Jungkunst et al. 2008; Berryman et al. 2009; Riet et al. 2013) which is an essential part of the GHG budget.

The aim of this study was to determine the effect of the water table position on GHG fluxes (CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O) in fen grassland mesocosms with intact vegetation (water-intolerant grasses and water-tolerant sedges). Gradual and complete rewetting was simulated under controlled environmental conditions simulating late spring conditions for 252 days.

Our main questions were:

- How does the vegetation react to raising water level and extended flooding (water-intolerant grasses versus water-tolerant sedges)? How does the contribution of autotrophic and heterotrophic respiration change with water table?
- Are there water table thresholds for drastic changes in GHG fluxes? At which water table position are net GHG emissions minimal? How are GHG fluxes affected by extended flooding?
- What is the effect of aerenchymous plants? Do sedges boost CH<sub>4</sub> emissions under wet conditions due to plant mediated CH<sub>4</sub> transport?

The results of the incubation experiments contribute functional knowledge for recommendations and risk assessment in practical rewetting.

## 2. Material and Methods

### 2.1. Site description

The sampling site “Freisinger Moos” (FSM) is located in the vicinity of the town Freising (South Germany, 48°37.2’N, 11°68.6’E, 470 m a.s.l.). The climate is temperate with a mean annual air temperature of 7.5°C and a mean annual precipitation of 788 mm (source: Agrarmeteorologie Bayern). The fen “Freisinger Moos” was extensively managed as pasture until 200 years ago. Nowadays, it is mainly used as grassland and for crop production. The groundwater level has been lowered in 1880 and thereafter several times during the 20<sup>th</sup> century (Kaufmann, 2004).

For the experiment, we selected two drained locations within less than 50 m distance with different plant composition and differing management intensity (for details see Table 1):

- 1) a grassland site with predominant grass vegetation (water-intolerant) which is intensively managed for dairy farming (TG5-F8 and TG5-F9, see also in (Drösler et al. 2011a)): we refer to this site as “grasses”; and
- 2) a site with water-tolerant sedge vegetation, a former peat cut site, which is extensively managed (TG5-F6 and TG5-F7, see also in (Drösler et al. 2011a)), we refer to this site as “sedges”.

The peat substrates differed significantly in bulk density, ash content, estimated carbon density and pore volume (Tab. 3-1). Bulk density was typical for highly degraded peat (grasses 0.37 and sedges 0.18 g cm<sup>-3</sup>) (Zeitz 2001). The pH was in the range of 5.9 to 5.6.

### 2.2. Experimental set up

In April 2008, at the early stage of vegetation development, intact soil mesocosms with vegetation were taken from the “grasses” and the “sedges” site in the Freisinger Moos (6 replicates each, for site characteristics see Tab. 3-1). A mesocosm was extracted by completely inserting a PVC tube (inner diameter = 16 cm, h = 50 cm) into the soil with a hydraulic drill and removing it by spade.

The mesocosms with vegetation were incubated in the climate chamber (York Deutschland GmbH, Mannheim, Germany) for 252 days under controlled temperature, air humidity, radiation and a 12/12 hours light/dark phase. Conditions in the climate chamber were set to typical temperature and radiation of a sunny spring day at the field site (see Fig. 3-2) and aim to give an idea of the potential CO<sub>2</sub> production respectively fixation and CH<sub>4</sub> formation. Air temperature and photosynthetic active radiation (PAR) were continuously logged at 5 minutes intervals at a central location in the climate chamber as well as at each mesocosm to monitor climate chamber performance and spatio-temporal variability. Measurements of soil temperature and redox profiles in the mesocosms are described in section 2.3.5. Maximum PAR in the climate chamber did not exceed 1200 μmol m<sup>-2</sup> s<sup>-1</sup> for technical reasons. Therefore, daily sum of PAR was lower in the climate chamber (32.1\*10<sup>6</sup> μmol m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup>) than on the field site (52.1\*10<sup>6</sup> μmol m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup>). Radiation was reduced by 9 to 15% within the variability of PAR in the climate chamber during the 252 days incubation period. The mean air temperature was comparable to the field site (16 °C). The mean soil temperature in 2 cm depth was slightly higher in the climate chamber (16.5 °C) and soil temperature in 30 cm depth slightly lower in the climate chamber (10.2 °C) compared to the field site (14.2 and 11.2 °C).

A basin (transparent acrylic glass; 35 x 35 x 7 cm<sup>3</sup>) attached and sealed to the top of each PVC tube acted as catchment basin for the supernatant water during flooding (referred to as inundation tank, Fig. 3-1). During flux measurements, the measurement chamber was attached to the bottom of the inundation tank.

The water table was manipulated by means of water canisters connected to the lower end of the mesocosms and applying the principle of communicating tubes. The water table in the mesocosms was raised every 29 days (-30, -20, -10, -5 and 0 cm) and was held at +5 cm for 109 days.

## 2.3. Measurements and data analyses

### Terminology and definitions

CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes are defined as negative when CO<sub>2</sub> is removed from the atmosphere and incorporated into the plant/soil. Positive values indicate a release of CO<sub>2</sub> from the ecosystem into the atmosphere. Net ecosystem exchange (NEE) is the result of CO<sub>2</sub> uptake by photosynthesis and the simultaneous release of CO<sub>2</sub> by respiration:  $NEE = GPP + R_{eco}$ . Gross primary production (GPP) is a measure for CO<sub>2</sub> uptake by photosynthesis and depends on PAR (Michaelis and Menten 1913). Strongly negative GPP values indicate a high capacity to fix CO<sub>2</sub>.

Ecosystem respiration ( $R_{eco}$ ) is the sum of heterotrophic and autotrophic respiration and a temperature driven process (Lloyd and Taylor 1994). Strongly positive  $R_{eco}$  values indicate an elevated release of CO<sub>2</sub> from the plant/soil into the atmosphere.

### Environmental conditions and soil parameters

Soil temperatures and redox potentials as well as air temperature and PAR within the climate chamber were logged every 5 minutes over the entire duration of the experiment (AM25T solid state multiplexer and Campbell Scientific data logger (both from Campbell Scientific Ltd., Logan, USA)).

Temperature probes (105T thermoelement probes, Campbell Scientific Ltd., Logan, USA) were permanently installed in -2, -5, -10 and -30 cm depths in each mesocosm. The redox potential in -5, -10, -15, -20, -30 cm depth of each mesocosm was measured via platin electrodes (construction based on (Fiedler et al. 2003) and an Ag/AgCl reference electrode (Mettler Toledo GmbH, Giessen, Germany) which was joined to the soil solution via a gel electrolyte bridge to avoid contamination (see mesocosm set-up in Fig. 3-1). The measured values were corrected by +210 mV at 5 cm depth, +214 mV at 10 and 15 cm depth and +217 mV at 20 and 30 cm depth according to the mean soil temperatures and the molarity of KCl solution in order to get the redox potential in relation to a standard hydrogen electrode (Calmano 2010).

Each mesocosm was insulated and connected to a soil cooling system (Minichiller, Huber GmbH, Offenburg, Germany) to ensure soil temperatures similar to that in the field (Fig. 3-1). Air and soil temperatures were simulated comparable to those of the sampling site (see Fig. 3-2).

Precipitation was simulated by adding 150 ml (for the first 50 incubation days) and 90 ml (thereafter) tap water on 5 days per week. Precipitation was independent of the regulation of the water table but was necessary to avoid drying-out of the topsoil.

For determination of pore volume, samples of a defined volume were taken in 5 respectively 10 cm intervals from the mesocosms and dried at 105°C. Dry weight was determined and samples were subsequently heated to 550° for 5 hours to incinerate all organic matter. The pore volume was

calculated as follows (according to (TGL 31222/03 1985)):

$$PV = 100 - \frac{BD * 207.6 - RI}{287.6} * 100$$

In which PV is the pore volume [%], BD the bulk density at 105°C [g cm<sup>-3</sup>] and RI is the residue on ignition at 550°C [mass%].

### Vegetation

The vegetation was regularly checked for pest infestation and treated with biological pest control when necessary. Vegetation development was documented by means of photos (Sony DSC-F828, f= 50mm, Sony Europe Ltd., Berlin, Germany). General vegetation development was assessed on the basis of the photos to account for the change in vegetation density and height over the incubation period and allocated to three categories: “old”: vegetation as from sampling with very small new shoots, “new”: upgrowth of the new shoots while old vegetation died-off successively, and “growth”: very strong growth of the new shoots with simultaneous dying-off and accumulation of old vegetation, growth of algae in inundation tank of grasses. At the end of experiment leaf area index and dry weight were determined for the above ground biomass.

### CO<sub>2</sub> exchange

Gas flux measurements and calculations in the mesocosms were performed according to the same methods as used for GHG flux measurements on various field sites (Drösler 2005; Drösler et al. 2011a; Beetz et al. 2013; Leiber-Sauheitl et al. 2014).

#### *Measurement method*

NEE and R<sub>eco</sub> were measured using a dynamic closed chamber system with a CO<sub>2</sub> infra-red gas analyser (model LI-6262, LI-COR Biosciences, Lincoln, USA,), a membrane pump (flow 3 l/min) and a data logger (Campbell Scientific Ltd., Logan, USA).

Transparent (NEE) and opaque (R<sub>eco</sub>) chambers (Fig. 3-1) were constructed according to (Drösler 2005) (30 x 30 x 40 cm, volume ~ 36 liters, material: 3 mm thick acrylic glass and white PVC, purchased from SKV GmbH, Jena, Germany) and equipped with two vents, a radiation-protected temperature sensor (Pt 100, LKM Electronic GmbH, Geraberg, Germany) and a PAR sensor (LI-COR Biosciences, Lincoln, USA,). Cooling packs (7.5 x 1.8 x 16.3 cm) and the adjustment of the air stream direction in the chamber kept the temperature at the desired level during measurements. The transparent chamber had a light transmission rate of approximately 95 %. Gas tightness of the chamber was assured by a rubber tube sealing at the chamber bottom and was tested before the start of the experiment. Pressure equilibration was done by a cable gland, which was closed after placement of the chamber before each measurement.

The chamber was attached with elastic bands to the inundation tank and the air stream of the vents adjusted. A measurement lasted for at least 3 minutes after checking the stability of the temperature (± 0.5°C) inside the chamber. CO<sub>2</sub> concentration, temperature and PAR data were logged in 2 second intervals (Campbell Scientific Datalogger, Campbell Scientific Ltd., Logan, USA).

The experiment lasted for 252 days during which CO<sub>2</sub> flux measurements were performed 30 times at the 13, 16, 18, 19, 23°C temperature levels and additionally 58 times at the 16°C temperature level.

*Procedure for CO<sub>2</sub> flux calculations*

CO<sub>2</sub> flux rates [mg C m<sup>-2</sup> h<sup>-1</sup>] were calculated according to the following formula (Flessa et al. 1998; Drösler 2005):

$$CO_2 \text{ flux} = \frac{M \times T_n}{V_n \times (T_n + T_s)} \times \frac{V}{A} \times \frac{d_c}{d_t} \times 10^{-3}$$

in which M is the molar mass of carbon [= 12.0107 g mol<sup>-1</sup>], V<sub>n</sub> the molar volume [= 22,4136 l mol<sup>-1</sup>] under standard conditions (T<sub>n</sub>=273.15°K), T<sub>s</sub> is the mean temperature in the chamber during measurement [°C], V is the volume of the chamber [liter], A the surface area of the mesocosm [~0.02 m<sup>2</sup>] and dc\*dt<sup>-1</sup> is the concentration change in the chamber atmosphere over time [ppm h<sup>-1</sup>].

A procedure for semi-automated quality-controlled CO<sub>2</sub> flux calculation from raw data was developed and implemented as R script (R Core Team 2010). The concentration change in the chamber atmosphere over time (dc\*dt<sup>-1</sup>) was calculated by applying a quadratic function (y = a+bx+cx<sup>2</sup>+e) to a selected section of the three-minute-measurement. The section of the curve was selected by taking into account the steepest part of the curve, the function fit (indicated by the residual standard error), the length of the selected section (indicated by the Akaike Information Criterion), as well as autocorrelation and normality of residuals (tested by Durbin Watson and Shapiro Wilk test).

To avoid potential interference of CO<sub>2</sub> concentration with photosynthesis, only the first part of the NEE measurement with a maximum change of concentration of 30 ppm was used for slope calculation.

*Calculation of daily sum of R<sub>eco</sub>, GPP, NEE*

For each measurement day on which flux measurements were made at all temperature levels the response of R<sub>eco</sub> to (air and soil) temperature was calculated by the equation according to (Lloyd and Taylor 1994) and fitted taking into account minimum residuals and maximum R<sup>2</sup>. The parameters R<sub>ref</sub> and E<sub>0</sub> were calculated according to:

$$R = R_{ref} \times e^{E_0 \left( \frac{1}{T_{ref} - T_0} - \frac{1}{T_{soil} - T_0} \right)}$$

in which R<sub>ref</sub> is the respiration rate at the reference temperature [mg C m<sup>-2</sup> h<sup>-1</sup>], E<sub>0</sub> the activation energy [°K], T<sub>ref</sub> the reference temperature: 283.15 [°K], T<sub>0</sub> the temperature constant for the start of biological processes: 227.13 [°K] and T<sub>soil</sub> is the air/soil temperature of best fit with the dataset [°K].

Based on the parameter R<sub>ref</sub> and E<sub>0</sub>, R<sub>eco</sub> was modelled with the air/soil temperatures measured during NEE measurements and GPP calculated. These GPP and the observed PAR data were fitted to the rectangular hyperbola equation according to (Michaelis and Menten 1913) and the parameter GP<sub>max</sub> and α calculated for each measurement day as follows:

$$NEE = \frac{GP_{max} \times \alpha \times PAR}{\alpha \times PAR + GP_{max}} - R$$

in which PAR is the photon flux density of the photosynthetic active radiation [μmol m<sup>-2</sup> s<sup>-1</sup>], GP<sub>max</sub> is the maximum rate of carbon fixation at PAR infinite (i.e. slope of zero) [mg C m<sup>-2</sup> h<sup>-1</sup>], α the maximum slope of GPP versus PAR at zero PAR [mg C m<sup>-2</sup> h<sup>-1</sup> / μmol m<sup>-2</sup> s<sup>-1</sup>] and R are flux rates

from the respiration model [ $\text{mg C m}^{-2} \text{ h}^{-1}$ ].

Daily  $R_{\text{eco}}$ , GPP and NEE [ $\text{g C m}^{-2} \text{ d}^{-1}$ ] were calculated as follows:  $R_{\text{eco}}$  and GPP were modelled in 5-minute-steps with the parameter  $R_{\text{ref}}$ ,  $E_0$ ,  $GP_{\text{max}}$  and  $\alpha$  based on the logged air and soil temperatures and radiation in the climate chamber. NEE was calculated as the sum of  $R_{\text{eco}}$  and GPP. These modelled values for 5-minute-intervals were added up to daily  $R_{\text{eco}}$ , GPP and NEE values.

#### *Contribution of heterotrophic ( $R_h$ ) and autotrophic ( $R_a$ ) respiration*

We calculated  $R_h$  based on  $R_a$ :GPP ratio reported in the literature (Schulze et al. 2009) – which is indicated to be relatively stable between 0.44 and 0.53 independent of ecosystem type. As these calculations would partly produce negative  $R_h$  values, which is biologically impossible, we used  $R_h > 0$  as constraint. In these calculations it is additionally assumed that the ratio  $R_a$ :GPP remained the same throughout the experiment and, because  $R_a$  is determined by GPP, autotrophic respiration was gradually reduced during rewetting.

#### **CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions**

The emissions of CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O from the mesocosm surface were determined using the static closed chamber method. Six opaque chambers (Fig. 3-1) without ventilation were attached to the inundation tank on top of the mesocosms and fixed with an elastic band. Gas samples were taken manually from the headspace by pumping headspace air through 20 ml glass flasks 0, 30, 60 and 90 minutes after closure. The temperature inside one of the chambers was recorded when sampling (Pt100, LKM Electronic GmbH, Geraburg, Germany). Sampling was done 25 times (at 13°C) and 32 times (at the 19 and 23°C temperature levels of the climate chamber) during 252 experimental days.

Gas samples were stored at room temperature and analysed with a gas chromatograph CP-3800 (Varian Inc., Walnut Creek, USA), equipped with a Quma QHSS-111 headspace sampler (Quma Elektronik und Analytik GmbH, Wuppertal, Germany), a flame ionization detector (FID) (300°C) for CH<sub>4</sub> detection and an electron capture detector (ECD) (390°C) for N<sub>2</sub>O measurement, packed column (70°C), using N<sub>2</sub> as carrier gas.

CH<sub>4</sub> [ $\text{mg C m}^{-2} \text{ h}^{-1}$ ] and N<sub>2</sub>O [ $\text{mg N m}^{-2} \text{ h}^{-1}$ ] flux rates were calculated as follows :

$$\text{flux} = \frac{M \times p_s \times T_n}{V_n \times p_n \times (T_n + T_s)} \times \frac{V}{A} \times \frac{d_c}{d_t}$$

in which M is the molar mass of carbon in CH<sub>4</sub> or nitrogen in N<sub>2</sub>O [= 12 or 28 g mol<sup>-1</sup>], V<sub>n</sub> the molar volume [= 22,4136 l mol<sup>-1</sup>] under standard conditions (p<sub>n</sub>=1013 hPa, T<sub>n</sub>=273.15°K), T<sub>s</sub> is the temperature when sampling [°C], p<sub>s</sub> the air pressure when sampling [hPa], V is the volume of the chamber [m<sup>3</sup>], A the surface area of the mesocosm [~0.02 m<sup>2</sup>] and dc\*dt<sup>-1</sup> is the concentration change in the chamber atmosphere over time.

#### **CO<sub>2</sub> equivalents**

The GHG fluxes were converted to CO<sub>2</sub> equivalents [ $\text{g CO}_2\text{-equ. m}^{-2} \text{ d}^{-1}$ ] based on the 100-year global warming potentials (GWP) (IPCC 2007) relative to CO<sub>2</sub>. For CO<sub>2</sub> we used daily NEE modelled with soil temperature in -2 cm depth, 1 g CH<sub>4</sub> = 25 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ., and 1 g N<sub>2</sub>O = 298 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. The GHG balance is the sum of CO<sub>2</sub> equivalents of the three GHGs.

## 2.4. Statistical analysis

All data manipulation, modelling and graphics were done using the R statistical environment (R Core Team 2013).

Differences in biomass dry weight and peat characteristics between grasses and sedges were tested using the Wilcoxon rank-sum test.

The flooding period was three times longer than other water table positions. For the graphical display and the modelling of GHG fluxes over the incubation period, these data were split into three phases corresponding to differences in ecosystem response to flooding: phase I: immediate response to flooding conditions up to emergence of methanogenesis (incubation days 144-162), phase II: transient response with vegetation adaptation (incubation days 163-232) and phase III: stabilized response to flooding (incubation days 233-252).

### *Linear mixed-effects model for GHG fluxes*

The effects of water table position and plant composition on  $R_{eco}$ , GPP, NEE and  $CH_4$  fluxes over the incubation period were estimated by linear mixed-effects models using the R package *nlme* (Pinheiro and Bates 2000).

Fixed effects were modelled for  $CO_2$  fluxes as

$$E(R_{eco} \text{ resp. } NEE | WT, PC, VD) = \beta_0 + \beta_1 WT + \beta_2 PC + \beta_3 VD + \beta_4 (WT \times PC) + \epsilon \quad ,$$

$$E(GPP | WT, PC, VD) = \beta_0 + \beta_1 WT + \beta_2 PC + \beta_3 VD + \beta_4 (WT \times PC) + \beta_5 (PC \times VD) + \epsilon \quad ,$$

and for methane as

$$E(CH_4 | WT, PC, VD) = \beta_0 + \beta_1 WT + \beta_2 PC + \beta_3 VD + \beta_4 (WT \times PC) + \epsilon$$

where WT is the water table position [-30 to +5 cm], PC is the plant composition [grasses or sedges], VD is the vegetation development [in three categories: old, new, growth],  $WT \times PC$  the interaction between water table position and plant composition and  $PC \times VD$  the interaction between plant composition and vegetation development.

For  $CO_2$  fluxes, two crossed random effects were used to account for global random differences due to temperature/PAR levels and differences between individual mesocosms; additionally, random differences in mesocosms nested within temperature/PAR levels were modelled over the incubation period. For  $CH_4$  fluxes, random differences between individual mesocosms were modelled over the incubation period and random differences in mesocosms per temperature/PAR level over the incubation period were considered.

Systematic differences in the variance structure between water table positions were accounted for by using the varIdent variance model implemented in nlme. The temporal dependence of observations over the incubation period was modelled by incorporating an autoregressive moving average (ARMA) model with 2 autoregressive terms and 2 moving-average terms for  $R_{eco}$  and GPP and a moving average model with 2 autoregressive terms for NEE.

The variability in biomass between mesocosms was included in the linear mixed-effects models as random effect.

### 3. Results

#### 3.1. Controlling factors of greenhouse gas fluxes

##### *Vegetation development and mass*

The vegetation in the sedges replicates was composed of sedge plants (74%), herbs (17%), grasses (6.5%), rushes (1.8%) and some moss. The vegetation in the grasses consisted solely of grass species except for mesocosm G-4 in which a large clover plant was growing.

Aboveground vegetation composition at incubation end clearly differed between grasses and sedges (see Fig. 3-3) although total dry weight (dw) was not significantly different (sedges:  $2.06 \pm 0.5$  kg dw m<sup>-2</sup>; grasses:  $2.01 \pm 0.5$  kg dw m<sup>-2</sup>). The fraction of green biomass was more than three times higher in sedges (range from 1.3 to 2.2 kg dw m<sup>-2</sup>, on average 81 % of total sedges biomass) than in grasses (0.5 to 0.7 kg dw m<sup>-2</sup>, 26 % of total grasses biomass). The fraction of brown (dead) biomass was 5 times higher in the grasses (0.5 to 2.0 kg dw m<sup>-2</sup>, 58 % of total grasses biomass) compared to sedges (0.1 to 0.3 kg dw m<sup>-2</sup>, 11 % of total sedges biomass). Algae, which grew in the inundation tank, were observed in the grasses only and accounted for 15 % of the total biomass. Other dead matter – which consisted of biomass other than leaves, e.g. leaf sheaths, dead roots and shoots, etc. – was observed in the sedges (8% of total sedges biomass) and in one of the grasses mesocosms.

We observed a positive correlation between the amount of dead leaves and algae and respiration rates.

Leaf area index (LAI) at incubation end mirrored the differences in biomass and was clearly higher in sedges (8.8 – 16.3 m<sup>2</sup> m<sup>-2</sup>) compared to grasses (5.4 to 7.5 m<sup>2</sup> m<sup>-2</sup>). While LAI of sedges was dominated by green leaves (85% green and 15 % brown leaves), brown leaves prevailed in grasses (32% green and 67% brown leaves).

##### *Redox potential*

Factors influencing the redox potential are pH, the presence of complexing ions, moisture and organic/inorganic matter. Therefore, it is only possible to define a qualitative value representative of a soil state (Pansu and Gautheyrou 2006). When examining the redox potential in connection with CH<sub>4</sub> production it is essential to consider the time when the redox potential falls below a defined threshold (Fiedler 1999). We set the threshold for methanogenesis at 0 mV. According to the assumption by (Pansu and Gautheyrou 2006), at a redox potential below 0 mV, conditions in the peat are considered anaerobic but not necessarily methanogenic, while below -150 mV, conditions are considered strictly anaerobic and consequently favourable for CH<sub>4</sub> production. The phase between 0 and -150 mV was quickly passed in our mesocosms.

Grasses and sedges strongly differed in the redox profile and in the reaction of redox potential to gradual rewetting. The redox potentials in grasses started with a homogeneous value above +600 mV in the entire soil profile at a water table of -30 cm (Fig. 3-4). When the water table was raised, redox potentials decreased homogeneously in the profile and passed the threshold for methanogenesis in -20 cm and -10 cm depth when water table was at -10 cm. After a few days of full rewetting to 0 cm the redox potentials dropped to values of -300 mV after flooding.

The redox potentials in sedges showed a persistent redox gradient in the profile until the soil was flooded for a week. Redox potentials rapidly reacted to water table changes and were stabilized at the new level within days, however with high daily fluctuations. The redox potentials of the topsoil (-5 cm) in sedges remained stable above +500 mV up to complete rewetting to 0 cm. Only with

flooding (+5 cm) conditions in the topsoil became favourable for methanogenesis. The redox potential in -10 cm depth slowly declined with raising water table and passed the threshold for methanogenesis a few days after full rewetting (0 cm). At -20 cm conditions turned favourable for methane production already at a water table of -20 cm (Fig. 3-4). During the flooding period redox potential was similar in the entire soil profile and never dropped below -230 mV.

### 3.2. CO<sub>2</sub> exchange

CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes reacted instantaneously – within one to a few days to changes in the water table position (data not shown). In periods of constant water table position, an equilibrium in CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes was established and therefore the measurements per water table were considered as replicates (see averaged CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes in Fig. 3-5 and results of linear mixed effect model in Tab. 3-2).

Plant composition and water table position had clearly discernible effects on CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes (Fig. 3-5, Tab. 3-2). Grasses and sedges reacted in similar direction, but with different thresholds to rewetting. The most pronounced changes in CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes were observed at the change from -30/-20 cm to -10 cm and at the change from 0 cm to +5 cm water table position (Fig. 3-5).

Daily R<sub>eco</sub> decreased continuously by 55 % in grasses and by 67 % in sedges until the 0 cm water level water level (Fig. 3-5 top). The decrease started earlier in sedges than in grasses. During the flooding period, daily R<sub>eco</sub> increased immediately and significantly in sedges and grasses back to the R<sub>eco</sub> levels of -10 cm (grasses) and -5cm (sedges). Daily R<sub>eco</sub> was consistently higher by 2.4 – 7.8 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> (19 – 42 %) in grasses than in sedges.

Daily GPP gradually decreased by 15 % in grasses and sedges with raising water table until the 0 cm water level (Fig. 3-5 centre). In this period, daily GPP was about 9 % higher in grasses than in sedges. At the change from the 0 cm to +5 cm water table position a decrease of daily GPP by further 15 % (grasses) and 18 % (sedges) was observed. The capacity to fix CO<sub>2</sub>-C recovered in sedges during the flooding period while it remained low in grasses (Fig. 3-5). Sedges grew new shoots during the +5 cm period while grasses were clearly stressed by the high water table position, turned yellow and partly died. The died-off plant material decayed, the grass tussocks were raised above the water table and only few new shoots were produced. In the grasses mesocosms, algae grew in the inundation tank (see Fig. 3-3) and were responsible for the slight recovery of GPP in phase III of the flooding period.

NEE is the result of CO<sub>2</sub> uptake for photosynthesis (GPP) and the simultaneous release of CO<sub>2</sub> due to respiration (R<sub>eco</sub>). Measurements in this experiment were mainly negative, because photosynthesis exceeded ecosystem respiration. Negative NEE is expected in grassland ecosystems on sunny warm spring days, which were continuously present in our mesocosms. At incubation start, daily NEE was clearly negative in sedges while it was close to zero in grasses. Gradual rewetting reduced R<sub>eco</sub> more than GPP leading to more negative values for daily NEE in sedges and grasses with raising water table until the 0 cm level (Fig. 3-5 bottom). Maximum daily net carbon uptake was observed at the 0 cm water level. With flooding, daily NEE was immediately and strongly reduced to values below -5 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in grasses and remained low, similar to the NEE at the drained start. In sedges, however, daily NEE only dropped in the first phase of flooding and recovered to a maximum net carbon uptake of -10 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> due to adaptation and recovery of the sedge vegetation.

The linear mixed-effects models allow a quantitative assessment of the impact of various parameters on CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes. The water table position had by far the largest effect on all CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes (Tab. 3-2). In the R<sub>eco</sub> and NEE models the plant composition (PC) together with the interaction of plant composition and water table (PC:WT) had a much smaller effect while vegetation development (VD) had the least impact. In the GPP model, VD and PC:VD had a medium effect, the interaction PC:WT was significant although relatively small and PC alone had no significant effect. For the sake of convenience, Tab. 3-2 lists only the effects of the two most important parameters – water table position and plant composition.

Predicted mean R<sub>eco</sub> in sedges was lower (74 %) relative to grasses averaged over all water table positions (for further explanation see Tab. 3-2). Estimated R<sub>eco</sub> decreased to 42 % in grasses and 29 % in sedges until the 0 cm water level (Tab. 3-2). With flooding, estimated R<sub>eco</sub> significantly increased immediately by 21 – 27 %. During extended flooding, estimated R<sub>eco</sub> in sedges decreased much stronger in sedges than in grasses.

The relative mean GPP was equal for grasses and sedges. Estimated GPP gradually decreased to 86 to 88 % until the 0 cm water level (Tab. 3-2). The decrease started slightly earlier in sedges, but was slightly stronger in grasses as a reaction to flooding. During extended flooding, estimated GPP stayed continuously low.

Estimated NEE increased in sedges and grasses with raising water table to a maximum net carbon uptake of ~ 133 % at the 0 cm water level (Tab. 3-2). The flooding event strongly reduced estimated NEE to ~ 91 % in both grasses and sedges. While the net carbon uptake was further reduced in grasses (to 85 %) during extended flooding it recovered in sedges up to 122 %.

### 3.3. CH<sub>4</sub> emissions

CH<sub>4</sub> emissions showed a slow but continuous reaction to changes in water table position (data not shown).

In the linear mixed-effects model for methane, the water table position and the interaction WT: PC had by far the largest effects on the CH<sub>4</sub> flux. The effect of PC alone was not significant. The vegetation development had a medium effect on the emissions in the mixed-effects model.

CH<sub>4</sub> emissions were zero at the -30, -20 and -10 water table positions and started to increase at the -5 cm water table in both sedges and grasses and strongly increased with further water table raise (Fig. 3-6). Despite different redox profiles and buffering or chimney effects of aerenchymous plants, there was no difference in the start of detectable CH<sub>4</sub> emissions between grasses and sedges. During the 0 cm water level phase and the subsequent flooding, CH<sub>4</sub> emissions increased strongly, reached a maximum in the middle of the flooding period (estimated mean of 16.1 for grasses and 9.8 mg C m<sup>-2</sup> h<sup>-1</sup> for sedges in phase II) and slightly decreased towards the end. During flooding, methane emissions were always significantly higher in the grasses than in sedges (Fig. 3-6).

Effect of vegetation development (VD): CH<sub>4</sub> emissions were zero to small from -30 to the 0 cm water table position when the vegetation was still in its early development stage (VD=old). Predictions of CH<sub>4</sub> emissions were in general higher by 3.6 mg C m<sup>-2</sup> h<sup>-1</sup> when the vegetation was fully developed and dead organic matter accumulated in the mesocosms (VD=growth).

### 3.4. N<sub>2</sub>O emissions

N<sub>2</sub>O emissions were under the level of 0.2 mg N m<sup>-2</sup> h<sup>-1</sup> during the entire incubation period (data not shown). In agricultural soils, a level of 0.2 – 0.4 mg N m<sup>-2</sup> h<sup>-1</sup> is generally considered as background, therefore no further statistical analysis was performed.

At the -30 cm water table position N<sub>2</sub>O was taken up by the peat in the same order of magnitude for grasses and sedges (on average -0.36 mg N m<sup>-2</sup> h<sup>-1</sup>). No N<sub>2</sub>O emissions occurred at subsequent water table positions.

### 3.5. GHG as CO<sub>2</sub> equivalents and ratio of all three GHG

The GHG balance was dominated by net CO<sub>2</sub> exchange. Methane contributed mainly during the flooding period and N<sub>2</sub>O had a small impact at the water table position of -30 cm only.

Grass mesocosms were a moderate net GHG sink of -10 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> when drained and jumped to a stronger net GHG sink of around -30 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> at water table positions between -10 and 0 cm. Flooding immediately and drastically reduced the net GHG sink to values below -6 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup>. Under extended flooding the GHG balance of grasses turned into GHG neutral and even positive with 4.6 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> because low net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake was more than compensated by CH<sub>4</sub> emissions in terms of CO<sub>2</sub>-equivalents.

Sedge mesocosms remained a net GHG sink throughout the experiment, starting with values of -22 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> at -30 cm, which increased during rewetting and doubled at complete rewetting (0 cm). The net GHG balance decreased to -20 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> as immediate response to flooding and turned back to -30 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> after vegetation had adapted to flooding. Methane emissions compensated 17 – 28 % of net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake in terms of CO<sub>2</sub>-equivalents in long-term flooded conditions.

The ratio CO<sub>2</sub> : CH<sub>4</sub> : N<sub>2</sub>O was 100 : 0 : 43 in grasses and 100 : 0 : 23 in sedges at -30 cm water table. CO<sub>2</sub> was the only relevant GHG at water table positions -20 to -5 cm (100 : 0 : 1 in both grasses and sedges). At 0 cm water table the ratio was 100 : 4 : 1 in grasses and 100 : 1 : 1 in sedges. During the flooding period the fraction of CH<sub>4</sub> increased and the ratio was 100 : 40-143 : 4 in grasses and 100 : 7-28 : 1 in sedges.

## 4. Discussion

### 4.1. Response of vegetation vitality and respiration to changes in water table position

#### *Vegetation response*

The capacity for CO<sub>2</sub> fixation (GPP) could be used as an indicator for assessing the vitality of the aboveground vegetation. The vegetation growing in the mesocosms reacted with reduced vitality to a water table raise from -30 cm up to 0 cm (see Fig. 3-5, centre). Sedges had in general a lower photosynthetic capacity (i.e. lower productivity) than grasses.

The water table raise from 0 cm to +5 cm obviously imposed a shock on the vegetation, which reacted with immediate and significant reduction of GPP. Sedges are adapted to wet conditions and can grow and survive under anaerobic conditions. They reacted to flooding by forming new leaves and growing vigorously and recovered after several weeks of wetness stress and adaptation (GPP increased during prolonged flooding). In contrast, grasses are not adapted to flooded conditions and reacted by forming mounds, yellowing of leaves and partial die-off of the very productive vegetation, GPP remained low during prolonged flooding. At incubation end, more than half of the total grasses biomass consisted of dead biomass (Fig. 3-3). During flooding, a shallow nutrient-rich lake was formed which allowed the growth of algae.

Permanent flooding led to increased availability of readily degradable matter from recently died-off plants, which is a major factor for methane production (Couwenberg 2009). This caused an increase in  $R_{\text{eco}}$  and  $\text{CH}_4$  emissions – which was significantly higher in grasses. A similar accumulation of dead organic matter was observed in the field at a rewetted fen site where a mud layer under permanent anaerobic conditions was formed producing high  $\text{CO}_2$  and  $\text{CH}_4$  emissions (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2011).

#### *Contribution of heterotrophic ( $R_h$ ) and autotrophic ( $R_a$ ) respiration*

Auto- and heterotrophic respiration ( $R_{\text{eco}}$ ) were gradually reduced in both grasses and sedges. In general,  $R_{\text{eco}}$  was lower in sedges. Water saturation, anaerobiosis and the accumulation of decomposition products may lead to a near shut down of hetero- and autotrophic respiration in ombrotrophic peat soils (Limpens et al. 2008).

Maximum possible  $R_a$ :GPP ratios were 0.30 for the sedges and 0.47 for the grasses which is close to the values given in the literature (Schulze et al. 2009). The proportion of  $R_h$  to  $R_{\text{eco}}$  was initially higher in sedges (0.6) than in grasses (0.5) and was gradually decreased to nearly zero at the 0 cm water table position. During prolonged flooding  $R_h$  was around 0.4 in both grasses and sedges with a further decrease in sedges.  $R_h$  under flooding likely resulted from decay of died-off vegetation parts.

## **4.2. The water table position and its influence on GHG fluxes – thresholds for drastic changes and minimal GHG fluxes**

### *Gradual rewetting*

$\text{CO}_2$  fluxes changed gradually during stepwise rewetting from -30 cm up to 0 cm. We observed a linear response of reduced GPP by  $0.1 \text{ g C m}^{-2} \text{ d}^{-1}$  per cm water table raise in both grasses and sedges and of reduced  $R_{\text{eco}}$  by 0.3 (sedges) to 0.4 (grasses)  $\text{g C m}^{-2} \text{ d}^{-1}$  per cm water table raise. Consequently, net  $\text{CO}_2$  uptake increased by 0.2 (sedges) to 0.3 (grasses)  $\text{g C m}^{-2} \text{ d}^{-1}$  per cm water table raise, which was equivalent to the reduction in  $R_h$  from peat mineralization. Our results agree with field observations on a histic Gleysol where  $R_{\text{eco}}$  decreased linearly with rising groundwater level and annual NEE budgets were positively correlated to mean annual water table levels (Leiber-Sauheitl et al. 2014).

Methane emissions were around zero from -30 to -5 cm water table position (Fig. 3-6) when the small amount of recently died-off plant material was small and the redox conditions in the surface peat layer were unfavourable for methanogenesis (Fig. 3-4).

N<sub>2</sub>O emissions were in the range of background at all water table positions with very small N<sub>2</sub>O uptake at the -30 cm water table only. This result agrees with the literature (Riet et al. 2013). The rate of N<sub>2</sub>O release (resulting from denitrification, nitrification and N<sub>2</sub>O reduction) depends on the water saturation of the soil and has a maximum at a water content of 70-80% of the pore volume (Meyer 1999). Redox potentials in topsoil were favourable for denitrification up to a water table of -10 cm. Denitrification might have produced N<sub>2</sub> in later phases of the incubation.

When all GHG fluxes are considered the linear response was even more pronounced (Fig. 3-7). Each cm water table raise increased the net GHG uptake by 0.6 (segdes) to 0.8 (grasses) g CO<sub>2</sub>-equivalents m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup>.

### *Flooding*

The most drastic change in GHG balance occurred at the step from complete rewetting (water table at 0 cm) to flooding (+5 cm) in both grasses and sedges (Fig. 3-5 and Fig. 3-6). Flooding caused a significant reduction of GPP and simultaneous increase in R<sub>eco</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emissions due to increased substrate availability.

In this incubation experiment with eternal spring conditions, flooding led to an immediate extra GHG emission of 27 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equivalents m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in grasses and 22 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equivalents m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in sedges (Fig. 3-7). Gradual rewetting and the step from completely rewetted to flooded has to our knowledge not been studied in such temporal detail and systematic way so far, and in some cases the CO<sub>2</sub> fixation by the vegetation was not included in the GHG budget. A peat mesocosm experiment with abrupt permanent flooding resulted in significantly reduced R<sub>eco</sub> fluxes and increased CH<sub>4</sub> emissions – which is in line with our findings –, however, the increase in CH<sub>4</sub> emissions expressed as CO<sub>2</sub>-equivalents was much smaller than the reduction in R<sub>eco</sub> emissions (Riet et al. 2013). In contrast, CH<sub>4</sub> was the main contributor to total GHG emissions in soil cores from a wetland after rewetting and contributed 60 to 80 % to total cumulative GHG emissions (Berryman et al. 2009). Field measurements showed that Dutch drainage ditches are important sources of CH<sub>4</sub> – emitting up to two times more methane than grasses under flooded conditions in our experiment – and that the contribution of CH<sub>4</sub> to the climatic effect in terms of CO<sub>2</sub>-equivalents is significant (Schrier-Uijl et al. 2010).

### *Thresholds for minimal GHG fluxes*

Net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake was strongest at -10 cm to 0 cm water table positions while respiration was lowest at 0 cm water table (Fig. 3-5). CH<sub>4</sub> emissions were zero from -30 to -5 cm water table position (Fig. 3-6). N<sub>2</sub>O emissions were very low and unaffected by the water table.

When taking into account all three GHGs, the most favourable water table positions in terms of mitigating climate change range from -10 cm to 0 cm, which corresponds to the typical water table range of natural peatlands. Our finding for an optimum water table position corresponds to other studies. (Drösler et al. 2011b) recommends an annual mean water table around -10 cm as the optimum with respect to GHG mitigation. (Jungkunst et al. 2008) suggests an optimum water table around -5 cm to minimize the net GHG balance.

When the explicit goal of peatland rewetting is the reduction of GHG emissions it should aim to avoid an increase in CH<sub>4</sub> emissions as methane has a global warming potential 25 times higher than CO<sub>2</sub> (IPCC 2007). (Drösler 2005) observed marginal release of CH<sub>4</sub> to the atmosphere at water tables of -10 cm and lower and emphasized the importance of the aerobic layer for CH<sub>4</sub> oxidation (Drösler et al. 2008). A comprehensive literature review of field GHG measurements in temperate

Europe shows that net CH<sub>4</sub> emissions were negligible at mean water table below -20 cm and steeply increased with rising water table, while net CO<sub>2</sub> emissions considerably decreased with a mean water table higher than -30 cm and were nearly zero when the water table was close to the surface (Couwenberg et al. 2008).

As the availability of substrates for CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> production, such as fresh plant litter and root exudates, is highest in the uppermost peat layer this layer will contribute most to CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> production while peat depths >10 cm marginally contribute to peat respiration and are irrelevant for methanogenesis (Estop-Aragonés and Blodau 2012).

The risk of high CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emissions after restoration is limited to continuously flooded conditions and the simultaneous presence of readily degradable organic matter (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2011). In contrast, if vegetation is adapted to wet conditions, shallow flooding will not turn the net GHG sink into a source. Raising the water table above the peat surface (flooding) has nearly cancelled the positive climatic effect in grasses (Fig. 3-7) because the lower net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake was more than compensated by CH<sub>4</sub> emissions in terms of CO<sub>2</sub>-equivalents. In sedges, CH<sub>4</sub> never risked to compensate the net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake – the positive climatic effect was halved after flooding.

The drastic effect on vegetation and GHG emissions has strong implications for peatland rewetting for GHG mitigation in practice. Degraded peat does not swell and buffer excess water so that rewetting can easily produce flooded conditions. An active vegetation not adapted to these flooded conditions may die-off producing readily degradable and energy-rich substrates for microbial decomposition processes (as showed in grasses). With flooding the GHG sink is drastically reduced or even turned to a GHG source if flooding persists for several weeks.

### **4.3. The effect of aerenchymous plants – do sedges boost CH<sub>4</sub> emissions?**

Plants with aerenchyma, e.g. sedges and rushes, are capable of transporting CH<sub>4</sub> from deeper, anaerobic peat horizons to the surface avoiding CH<sub>4</sub> oxidation in aerobic layers (“chimney-effect”) (Augustin 2001; Couwenberg 2009). These “shunt” species are responsible for high CH<sub>4</sub> emissions at a high water table. In our study, we did not observe this “chimney-effect” under flooded conditions in sedges.

However, aerenchymous plants enabled the transport of O<sub>2</sub> into deeper soil horizons which stabilized the redox potential in deeper zones of the sedges mesocosms (see Fig. 3-4). Redox conditions favourable for CH<sub>4</sub> production occurred later and consequently led to a lower CH<sub>4</sub> production in sedges – CH<sub>4</sub> never risked to compensate the net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake. In the topsoil, conditions favourable for methanogenesis occurred ~30 days later in sedges than in grasses.

Methane concentrations in fen peat mesocosms were elevated only after electron acceptors were completely depleted which occurred within 50 days of permanently wet conditions (Knorr and Blodau 2009).

## 5. Conclusions

We present data on the functional role of the water table position on GHG exchange in incubated peat mesocosms from managed fen grasslands. Peatland rewetting with the aim to reduce GHG emissions should take into account the following recommendations which are based on our findings:

Gradually raising the water table up to 0 cm has a positive climatic effect – it increases net GHG uptake in terms of CO<sub>2</sub>-equivalents because net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake increases while emissions of CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O remain low. However, vegetation vitality is affected by the re-established water saturated conditions.

Flooding, in contrast, significantly reduces or may even cancel the positive climatic effect because of increased CO<sub>2</sub> loss from respiration and increased CH<sub>4</sub> emissions – depending on the vegetation and its adaptation to water saturated conditions. Flooding bears the greatest risk for high GHG emissions. Aerenchymous plants do not necessarily boost CH<sub>4</sub> emissions – they contribute to the stabilization of the redox potential retarding the onset of methanogenesis and lowering CH<sub>4</sub> production under wet conditions.

To achieve minimal GHG fluxes in rewetting, a near-natural water table position is recommended (i.e. between -10 cm to 0 cm). A water table slightly below the soil surface limits CO<sub>2</sub> loss from heterotrophic respiration, allows for CH<sub>4</sub> oxidation in the shallow aerobic layer and is favourable for vegetation vitality. Rewetting measures should support a vegetation transition towards wetness-adapted species.

## Acknowledgements

We are grateful to the technical staff of the Max Planck Institute for Biogeochemistry for their excellent assistance in setting up the experiment in the climate chamber and in planning and constructing the required equipment as well as performing measurements on peat substrates and soil solutions. Furthermore, CH<sub>4</sub> gas analyses were performed at the Max Planck Institute for Biogeochemistry. A number of students worked in the climate chamber performing gas flux measurements and sampling. We wish to thank Matthias Drösler (HSWT, Freising) for allowing mesocosm sampling, providing information of the sampling sites and for his support in discussions on gas flux calculations and modelling. We thank Jan Heinichen for his contribution to set up the experiment in the climate chamber done within the framework of his diploma thesis. Funding for this research was provided by the Federal Ministry of Education and Research (BMBF) through the integrative project “*Climate mitigation via peatland management*” (FKZ 01LS05051) and the Thünen Institute.

## References

- Augustin J (2001) Emission, Aufnahme und Klimarelevanz von Spurengasen. In: Succow M, Joosten H (eds) *Landschaftsökologische Moorkunde*, 2. Auflage. Schweitzerbart'sche Verlagsbuchhandlung, pp 28–37
- Beetz S, Liebersbach H, Glatzel S, et al. (2013) Effects of land use intensity on the full greenhouse gas balance in an Atlantic peat bog. *Biogeosciences* 10:1067–1082. doi: 10.5194/bg-10-1067-2013
- Berryman EM, Venterea RT, Baker JM, et al. (2009) Phosphorus and greenhouse gas dynamics in a drained calcareous wetland soil in Minnesota. *Journal of Environmental Quality* 38:2147–2158. doi: 10.2134/jeq2008.0409
- Calmano W (2010) Bestimmung des Redoxpotentials. *Praktikum Umweltchemie der Technischen Universität Hamburg-Harburg*. Institut für Umwelttechnik und Energiewirtschaft. pp 23–27.
- Couwenberg J (2009) Methane emissions from peat soils: Facts, MRV-ability, emission factors. Report for the UN-FCCC meetings in Bonn, August 2009. *International Wetlands* pp 16.
- Couwenberg J, Augustin J, Michaelis D, et al. (2008) Entwicklung von Grundsätzen für eine Bewertung von Niedermooren hinsichtlich ihrer Klimarelevanz. Studie im Auftrag des Ministerium für Landwirtschaft und Naturschutz Mecklenburg-Vorpommern. pp 33.
- Drösler M (2005) Trace gas exchange and climatic relevance of bog ecosystems, Southern Germany. Dissertation pp 182.
- Drösler M, Adelman W, Augustin J, et al. (2011a) Klimaschutz durch Moorschutz - Schlussbericht des Vorhabens „Klimaschutz - Moornutzungsstrategien“ - “Climate mitigation via peatland management”, 2006-2010. pp 178.
- Drösler M, Freibauer A, Adelman W, et al. (2011b) Klimaschutz durch Moorschutz in der Praxis: Ergebnisse aus dem BMBF-Verbundprojekt „Klimaschutz - Moornutzungsstrategien“ - “Climate mitigation via peatland management”, 2006-2010. pp 21.
- Drösler M, Freibauer A, Christensen TR, Friberg T (2008) Observations and status of peatland greenhouse gas emissions in Europe. In: Dolman AJ, Valentini R, Freibauer A (eds) *The continental-scale greenhouse gas balance of Europe*. Springer Verlag, pp 243–262
- Estop-Aragonés C, Blodau C (2012) Effects of experimental drying intensity and duration on respiration and methane production recovery in fen peat incubations. *Soil Biology and Biochemistry* 47:1–9. doi: 10.1016/j.soilbio.2011.12.008
- Fiedler S (1999) In situ long-term-measurements of redox potential in redoximorphic soils. In: Schüring J, Schulz HD, Fischer WR, et al. (eds) *Redox: Fundamentals, Processes and Applications*. Springer Verlag, pp 81–94

- Fiedler S, Scholich GU, Kleber M (2003) Innovative electrode design helps to use redox potential as a predictor for methane emissions from soils. *Communications in Soil Science and Plant Analysis* 34:481–496. doi: 10.1081/CSS-120017833
- Flessa H, Wild U, Klemisch M, Pfadenhauer J (1998) Nitrous oxide and methane fluxes from organic soils under agriculture. *European Journal of Soil Science* 49:327–335.
- Hahn-Schöfl M, Zak D, Minke M, et al. (2011) Organic sediment formed during inundation of a degraded fen grassland emits large fluxes of CH<sub>4</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub>. *Biogeosciences* 8:1539–1550. doi: 10.5194/bg-8-1539-2011
- Hendriks DMD, Huissteden J Van, Dolman AJ, Molen MK Van Der (2007) The full greenhouse gas balance of an abandoned peat meadow. *Biogeosciences* 4:411–424. doi: 10.5194/bg-4-411-2007
- Höper H (2007) Freisetzung von Treibhausgasen aus deutschen Mooren. *TELMA - Berichte der Deutschen Gesellschaft für Moor- und Torfkunde Band 37*:85–116.
- Höper H, Augustin J, Cagampan J, et al. (2008) Restoration of peatlands and greenhouse gas balances. In: Strack M (ed) *Peatlands and Climate Change*. International Peat Society, Jyväskylä, pp 182–210
- IPCC (2007) IPCC Fourth Assessment Report (AR4), Working Group 1, Chapter 2, Changes in Atmospheric Constituents and in Radiative Forcing. pp 234.
- Jungkunst HF, Flessa H, Scherber C, Fiedler S (2008) Groundwater level controls CO<sub>2</sub>, N<sub>2</sub>O and CH<sub>4</sub> fluxes of three different hydromorphic soil types of a temperate forest ecosystem. *Soil Biology and Biochemistry* 40:2047–2054. doi: 10.1016/j.soilbio.2008.04.015
- Knorr K-H, Blodau C (2009) Impact of experimental drought and rewetting on redox transformations and methanogenesis in mesocosms of a northern fen soil. *Soil Biology and Biochemistry* 41:1187–1198. doi: 10.1016/j.soilbio.2009.02.030
- Laine J, Minkinen K, Trettin C (2009) Direct human impacts on the peatland carbon sink. In: Baird AJ, Belyea LR, Comas X, et al. (eds) *Carbon Cycling in Northern Peatlands*. Geophysical Monograph No. 184. American Geophysical Union, pp 71–78
- Leiber-Sauheitl K, Fuß R, Voigt C, Freibauer A (2014) High CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes from grassland on histic Gleysol along soil carbon and drainage gradients. *Biogeosciences* 11:749–761. doi: 10.5194/bg-11-749-2014
- Limpens J, Berendse F, Blodau C, et al. (2008) Peatlands and the carbon cycle: from local processes to global implications – a synthesis. *Biogeosciences* 5:1475–1491.
- Lloyd J, Taylor JA (1994) On the temperature dependence of soil respiration. *Functional Ecology* 8:315–323.
- Meyer K (1999) Die Flüsse der klimarelevanten Gase CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> und N<sub>2</sub>O eines nordwestdeutschen Niedermoors unter dem Einfluß der Wiedervernässung. *Göttinger Bodenkundliche Berichte Band 111*, Geologischer Dienst NRW pp 134.

- Michaelis L, Menten ML (1913) Die Kinetik der Invertinwirkung. *Biochemische Zeitschrift* 49:333–369.
- Pansu M, Gautheyrou J (2006) Redox potential. *Handbook of soil analysis: mineralogical, organic and inorganic methods*. Springer Verlag, Berlin, pp 581–591
- Pinheiro JC, Bates DM (2000) *Mixed-effects models in S and S-Plus*. Springer Verlag, New York, pp 528
- R Core Team (2010) *R: A Language and Environment for Statistical Computing*. R Foundation for Statistical Computing, Vienna, Austria. URL <http://www.R-project.org/>.
- R Core Team (2013) *R: A Language and Environment for Statistical Computing*. R Foundation for Statistical Computing, Vienna, Austria. URL <http://www.R-project.org/>.
- Reiche M, Gleixner G, Küsel K (2010) Effect of peat quality on microbial greenhouse gas formation in an acidic fen. *Biogeosciences* 7:187–198.
- Riet BP, Hefting MM, Verhoeven JTA (2013) Rewetting drained peat meadows: risks and benefits in terms of nutrient release and greenhouse gas exchange. *Water, Air, & Soil Pollution* 224:1440. doi: 10.1007/s11270-013-1440-5
- Schimel JP (1995) Plant transport and methane production as controls on methane flux from arctic wet meadow tundra. *Biogeochemistry* 28:183–200. doi: 10.1007/BF02186458
- Schrier-Uijl AP, Veraart AJ, Leffelaar PA, et al. (2010) Release of CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> from lakes and drainage ditches in temperate wetlands. *Biogeochemistry* 102:265–279. doi: 10.1007/s10533-010-9440-7
- Schulze ED, Luyssaert S, Ciais P, et al. (2009) Importance of methane and nitrous oxide for Europe's terrestrial greenhouse-gas balance. *Nature Geoscience* 2:842–850. doi: 10.1038/ngeo686
- TGL 31222/03 (1985) *Standard methods in soil physics - density and porosity*. Staatlich Technische Normen, Gütevorschriften und Lieferbedingungen Standards der DDR, Berlin.
- Warren MW, Kauffman JB, Murdiyarso D, et al. (2012) A cost-efficient method to assess carbon stocks in tropical peat soil. *Biogeosciences* 9:4477–4485. doi: 10.5194/bg-9-4477-2012
- Zeitz J (2001) Physikalisch-hydrologische Kennzeichnung. In: Succow M, Joosten H (eds) *Landschaftsökologische Moorkunde*, 2. Auflage. Schweitzerbart'sche Verlagsbuchhandlung, pp 85–92

## Tables and Figures

Tab. 3-1: Characterization of the sampling sites in the Freisinger Moos: dominant vegetation, management and soil characteristics<sup>\*</sup>)

	<b>Grasses</b>	<b>Sedges</b>
Name of site in other literature <sup>**</sup>	Intensively managed grassland (TG5-F8, TG5-F9)	Extensively managed grassland with sedges (TG5-F6, TG5-F7)
Dominant vegetation	mainly <i>Festuca pratensis</i> , <i>Poa trivialis</i> , <i>Alopecurus pratensis</i> and <i>Dactylis glomerata</i>	mainly <i>Carex elata</i> , <i>Mentha pulegium</i>
Management <sup>***</sup>	Middle intensity management: 2-3 cuttings per year, low water table, fertilization	extensive management within the framework of nature protection: hay meadow for litter, 1 cut in autumn, litter is removed, drained, no fertilization; former peat cut site
	carbon export: 470 (2007) and 192 (2008) g C m <sup>-2</sup> yr <sup>-1</sup>	carbon export: 106 (2007) and 21 (2008) g C m <sup>-2</sup> yr <sup>-1</sup>
	carbon import: 135 (2007 and 2008) g C m <sup>-2</sup> yr <sup>-1</sup>	
Mean water table at the site <sup>**</sup>	< -60 cm	-30 to -60 cm
Soil type	Sapric Histosol	Sapric Histosol
Bulk density [g cm <sup>-3</sup> ] <sup>*</sup>	0.37 (± 0.11) <sup>a</sup>	0.18 (± 0.01) <sup>b</sup>
Ash content [%] <sup>#*</sup>	38.6 (± 4.5) <sup>a</sup>	26.0 (± 3.7) <sup>b</sup>
Carbon density [kg C m <sup>-3</sup> ] <sup>###*</sup>	177.6 (± 51.6) <sup>a</sup>	90.7 (± 5.3) <sup>b</sup>
Pore volume [%] <sup>*</sup>	77.6 (± 7.3) <sup>a</sup>	88.8 (± 0.7) <sup>b</sup>
pH <sup>*</sup>	5.9 (± 0.3) <sup>a</sup>	5.6 (± 0.3) <sup>a</sup>

\* soil characteristics determined from mesocosms at incubation end (mean ± SD, n = 6; different letters indicate significant differences, p<0.05, Wilcoxon test)

\*\* (Drösler et al. 2011a)

\*\*\* personal communication with Mathias Drösler

# determined by loss on ignition at 550°C

### belowground carbon estimated based on bulk density according to (Warren et al. 2012)

Tab. 3-2: Relative change in CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes as an effect of plant composition and water table position\* calculated from predictions derived from linear mixed-effects models for R<sub>eco</sub>, GPP and NEE:

	R <sub>eco</sub>		GPP		NEE	
	grasses	sedges	grasses	sedges	grasses	sedges
<b>Effect of plant composition** [%]</b>						
Relative mean CO <sub>2</sub> flux	100.0	74.1 ± 9.1	100.0	100.0 ± 7.9	100.0	110.0 ± 15.2
<b>Effect of water table position*** [%]</b>						
-30 cm	100.0	79.4	100.0	101.2	100.0	112.9
-20 cm	94.6	64.3	98.0	94.9	101.4	115.5
-10 cm	64.9	55.5	92.6	90.1	120.1	113.0
-5 cm	55.0	39.5	89.5	86.7	124.8	122.7
0 cm	41.8	28.8	88.3	86.5	132.3	134.6
phase I: 5 cm	62.7	55.7	79.2	84.9	91.5	90.5
phase II: 5 cm	48.2	33.1	74.2	74.0	94.6	110.6
phase III: 5 cm	51.8	32.7	75.5	78.3	85.1	121.9

\* All percentages were calculated based on prediction means derived from the respective linear mixed-effects models for R<sub>eco</sub>, GPP, and NEE (compare App-Fig. 3-1 in the Appendix; for details on linear mixed-effects models see App-Tab. 3-1 to 3-4).

\*\* Percentages express the reduction in the predicted mean CO<sub>2</sub> flux of sedges relative to grasses averaged over all water table positions. The confidence limits reflect the uncertainty due to differences between water table positions and not the uncertainty in model prediction.

\*\*\* Percentages express the relative reduction in the predicted mean CO<sub>2</sub> flux compared to grasses at the -30 cm water table (compare App-Fig. 3-1 in the Appendix for prediction intervals).

Fig. 3-1: Mesocosm set-up in the climate chamber:

a) PVC tube contained peat core with vegetation which was equipped with b) insulation and c) cooling system. In each of the 12 mesocosms d) redox probes were installed in 5 depths (including an e) Ag/AgCl reference electrode) and f) soil temperature probes in 4 depths. Water table manipulation was assured via water supply at the mesocosm bottom (g). An h) inundation tank served as basin for supernatant water during flooding and to place the i) measurement chamber. The transparent / opaque measurement chamber had j) two vents, k) a radiation-protected temperature sensor and l) a PAR sensor. Air temperature was held constant via m) cooling packs. Gas sampling was done via n) two ports (flow-through to an infra-red gas analyser) or manually via o) a septum.

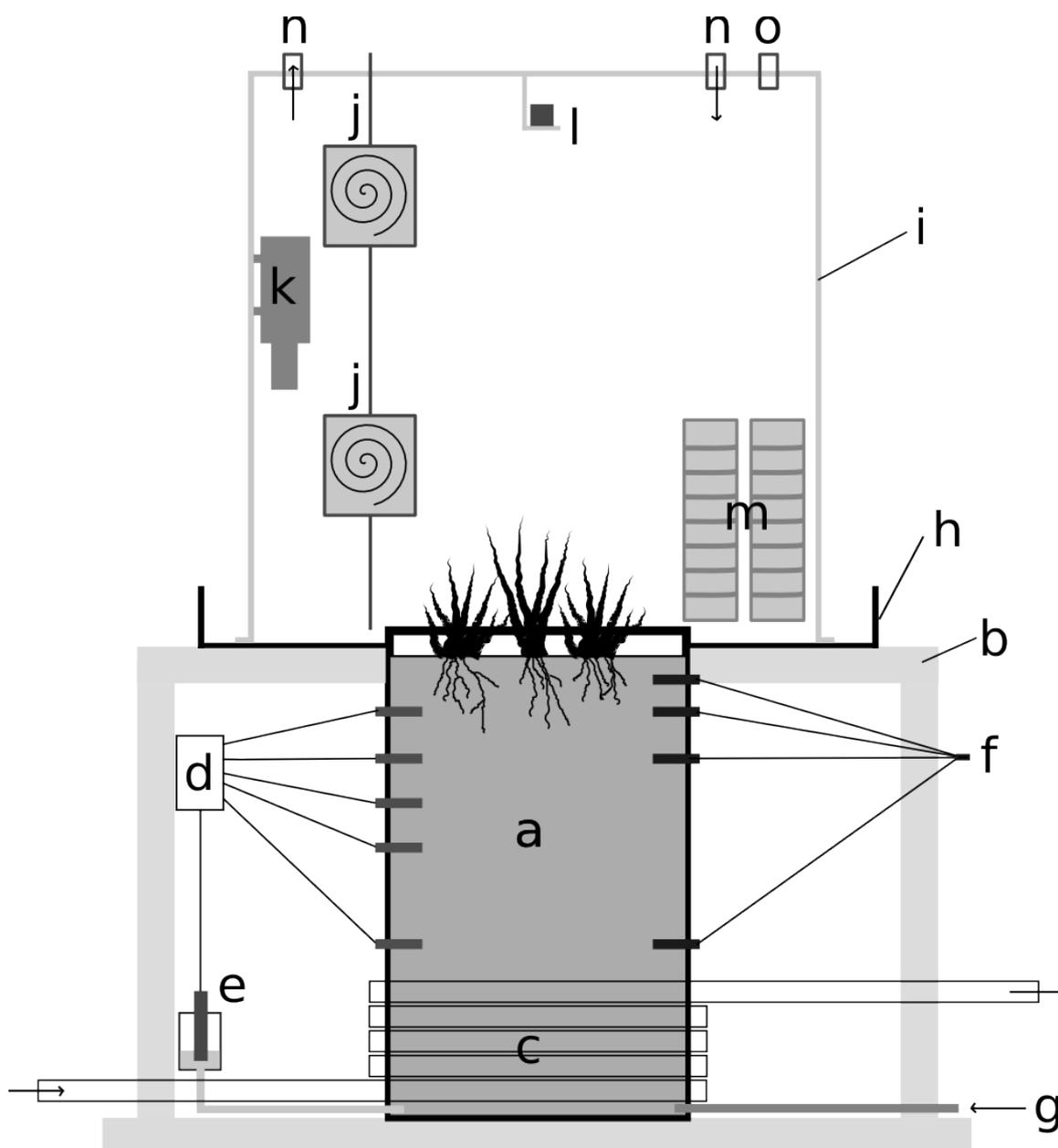


Fig. 3-2: Diurnal radiation and temperature conditions in the climate chamber (black line) and at the sampling site (grey line): photosynthetic radiation (PAR, top), air temperature (centre) and soil temperature in -2 cm depth (bottom). The dotted line indicates the desired temperature level.

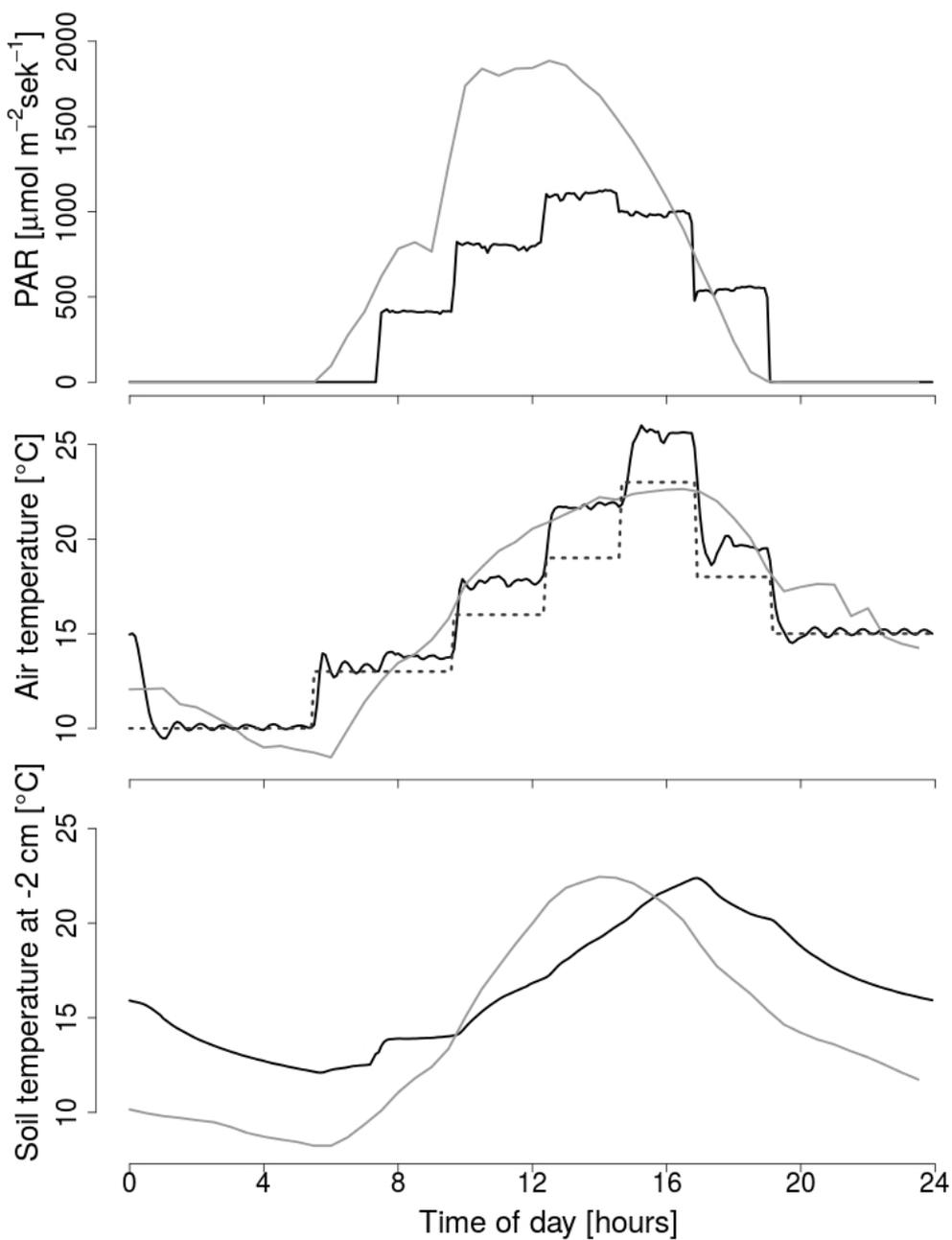


Fig. 3-3: Biomass per area in mesocosms in grasses (left) and sedges (right) at incubation end (separated in fraction green leaves, brown leaves, algae present in the inundation tank and other dead matter (such as leaf sheaths, dead roots and shoots, etc.))

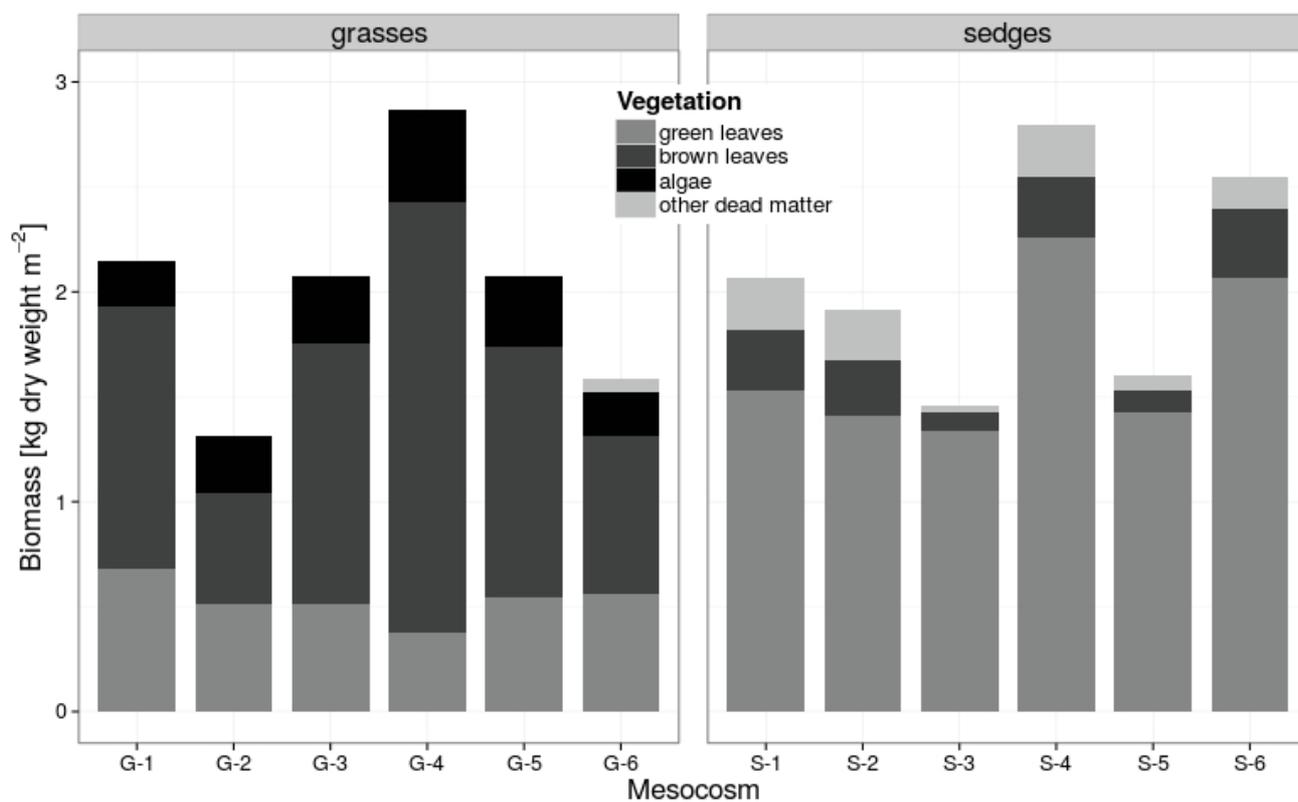


Fig. 3-4: Redox potential over the course of the experiment in grasses (top) and sedges (bottom) measured in -5, -10 and -20 cm depth (daily mean of 6 replicates, n=1728). The dotted line indicates the threshold for methanogenesis.

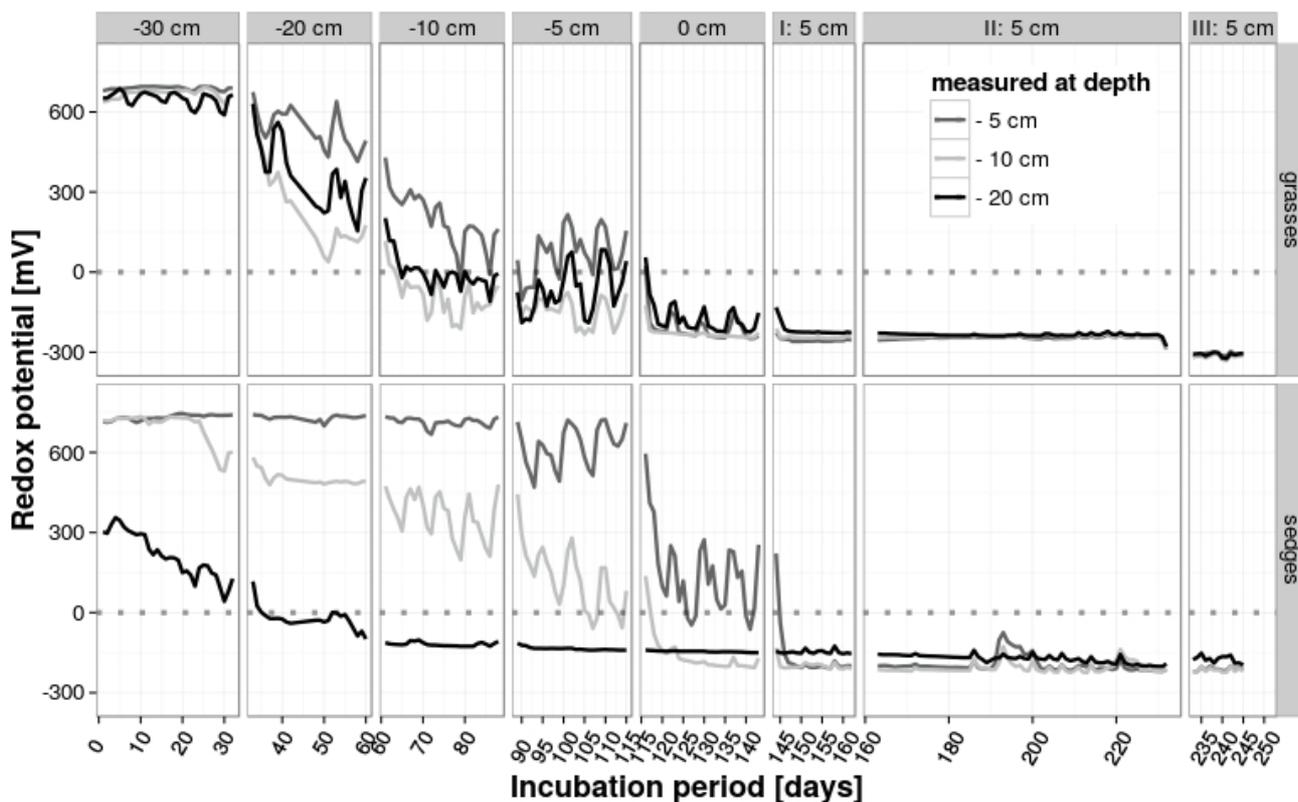


Fig. 3-5: Daily  $R_{eco}$  (top), GPP (centre) and NEE (bottom) in grasses (black) and sedges (grey) at raising water table positions (modelling is based on fitting measurements to Lloyd & Tayler and Michealis & Menten function; crossbar shows mean  $\pm$  standard deviation,  $n=3$  to 11). The water table position at +5cm has been split into 3 phases corresponding to differences in ecosystem response to flooding (for details see section 2.4).

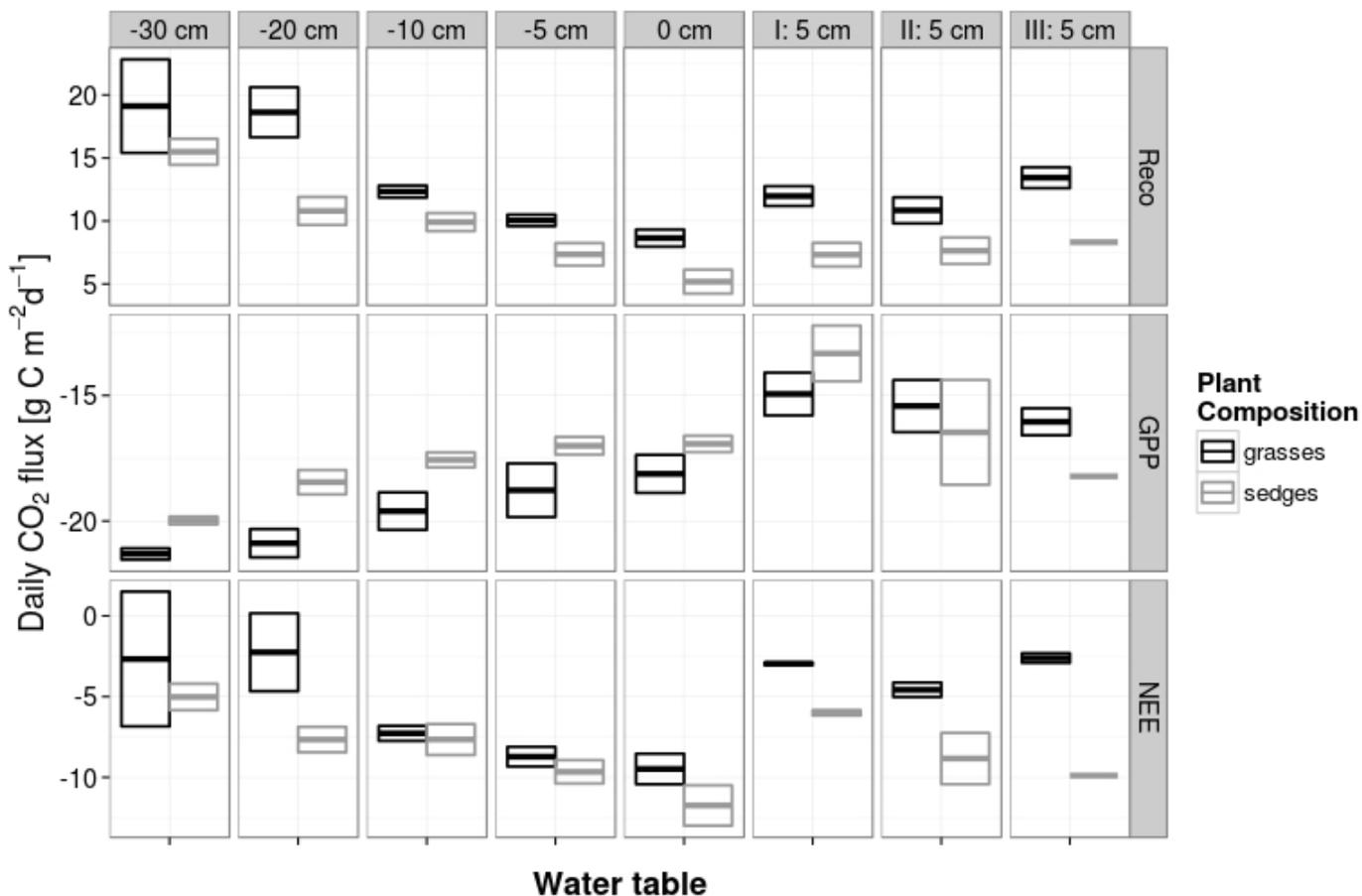


Fig. 3-6: Estimated  $\text{CH}_4$  flux based on the linear mixed-effects model in grasses (black) and sedges (grey) at the different water table positions ( $\pm 95\%$  prediction interval). The water table position at +5cm has been split into 3 phases corresponding to differences in ecosystem response to flooding (for details see section 2.4). Predictions are given only for those vegetation development categories (as solid, dashed or dotted lines) which occurred during the incubation experiment.

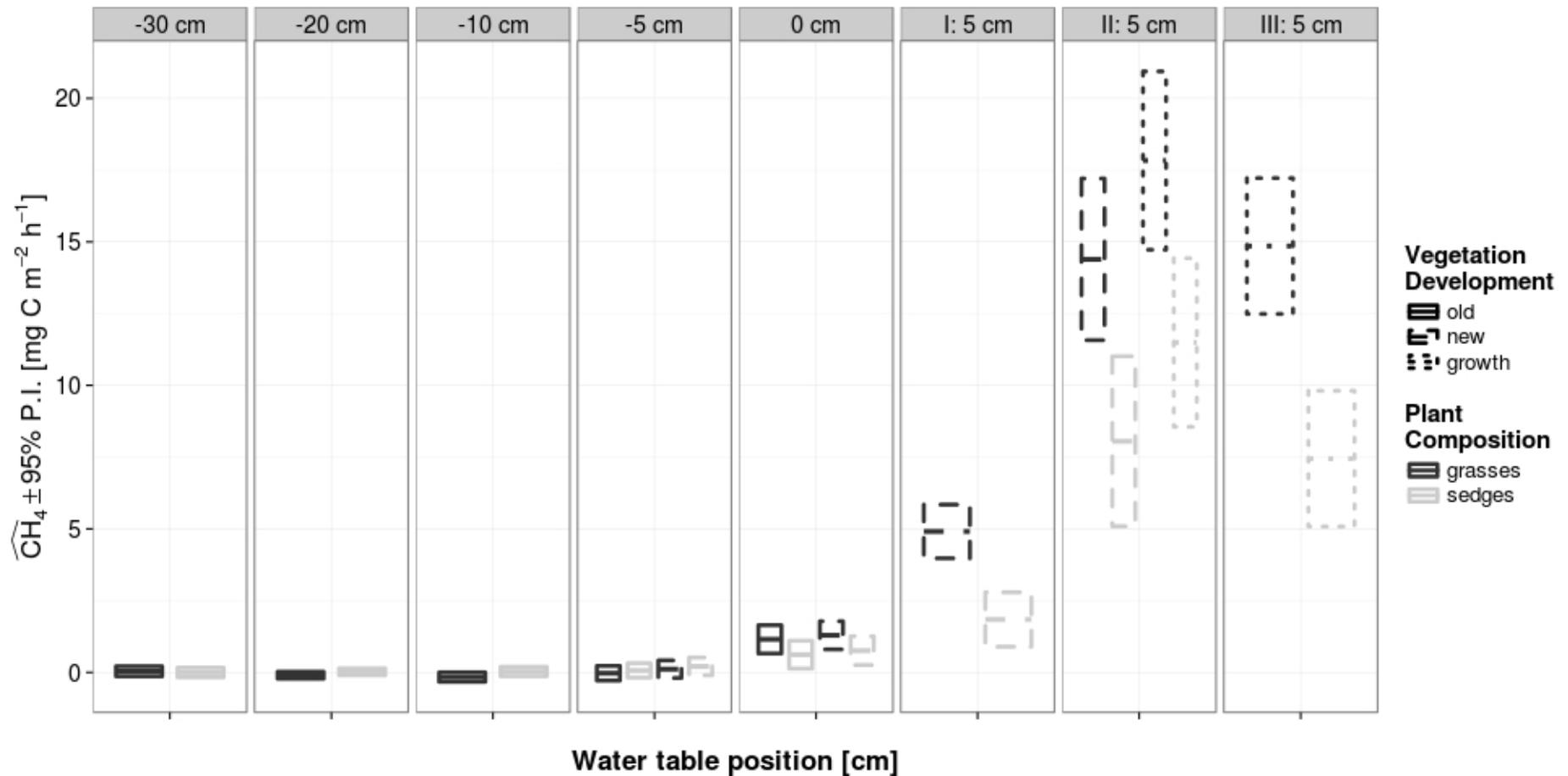
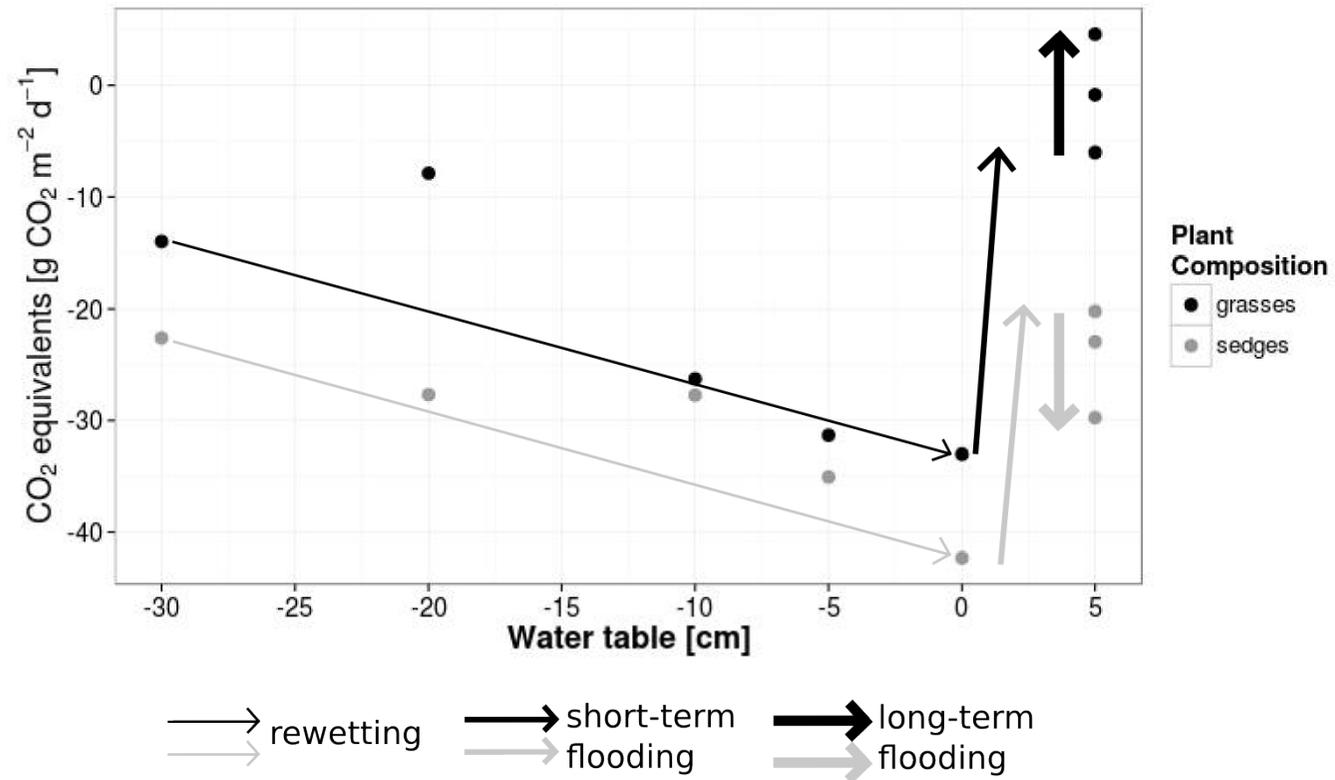
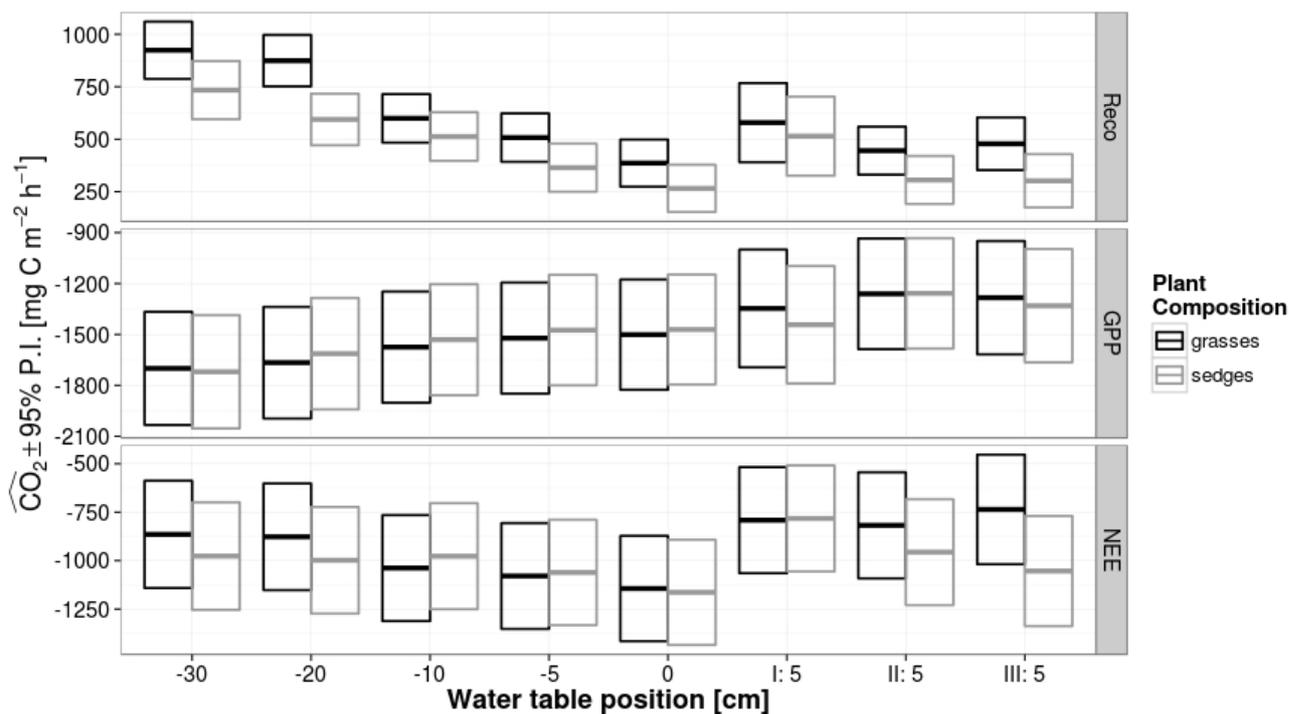


Fig. 3-7: CO<sub>2</sub> equivalents of the three greenhouse gases at different water table positions of grasses (black) and sedges (grey). Arrows indicate the general trend.



## Appendix

App-Fig. 3-1: Estimated CO<sub>2</sub> flux based on the linear mixed-effects model in grasses (black) and sedges (grey) at the different water table positions ( $\pm$  95% prediction interval; top: R<sub>eco</sub>, centre: GPP, bottom: NEE). The effect of vegetation development was relatively small and consequently estimations for the three vegetation development categories were averaged.



### Linear mixed-effects model developed for GHG flux data

In the following tables the linear mixed-effects models developed for GHG flux data are described in more detail. The following abbreviations were used:

fSetTemp	temperature level as set in the climate chamber [13, 16, 18, 19, 23°C]
Col	mesocosm number [1 to 12]
IncDay	day of incubation [1 to 252]
tmpcol	crossed random effects between temperature level and mesocosm to account for global random differences due to temperature/PAR levels and differences between individual mesocosms
WT2	water table positions with the flooding period split into 3 phases as used for the CO <sub>2</sub> flux data [-30, -20, -10, -5, 0, I: +5, II: +5 and III: +5 cm]
WT3	water table positions as used for the CH <sub>4</sub> flux data [<0, 0, I: +5, II: +5 and III: +5 cm]
PC	plant composition [grasses or sedges]
VD	vegetation development [in the categories: old, new, growth]
WT×PC	interaction between water table position and plant composition
PC×VD	interaction between plant composition and vegetation development
const	a dummy variable used to express crossed-block designs in <i>nlme</i> (Pinheiro & Bates, 2000)

App-Tab. 3-1: Linear mixed-effects model of  $R_{eco}$  vs. water table position, plant composition and vegetation development

```

Linear mixed-effects model fit by REML
Data:
AIC      BIC      logLik
 28802.35 29003.03 -14366.18

Random effects:
Composite Structure: Blocked

Block 1: fSetTemp13°C, fSetTemp16°C, fSetTemp19°C, fSetTemp23°C, fSetTemp18°C
Formula: ~fSetTemp - 1 | const
Structure: Multiple of an Identity
      fSetTemp13°C fSetTemp16°C fSetTemp19°C fSetTemp23°C fSetTemp18°C
StdDev:    98.07363    98.07363    98.07363    98.07363    98.07363

Block 2: Col1, Col2, Col3, Col4, Col5, Col6, Col7, Col8, Col9, Col10, Col11, Col12
Formula: ~Col - 1 | const
Structure: Multiple of an Identity
      Col1    Col2    Col3    Col4    Col5    Col6    Col7    Col8    Col9    Col10    Col11    Col12
StdDev: 84.09787 84.09787 84.09787 84.09787 84.09787 84.09787 84.09787 84.09787 84.09787 84.09787 84.09787 84.09787

Formula: ~IncDay | tmpcol %in% const
Structure: General positive-definite, Log-Cholesky parametrization
      StdDev      Corr
(Intercept) 2.962900e-02 (Intr)
IncDay      7.212417e-05 0
Residual    2.725497e+02

Correlation Structure: ARMA(2,2)
Formula: ~IncDay | const/tmpcol
Parameter estimate(s):
      Phi1      Phi2      Theta1      Theta2
0.237112369 0.739119596 -0.007708513 -0.695887596

Variance function:
Structure: Different standard deviations per stratum
Formula: ~1 | WT2
Parameter estimates:
      -30 cm    -20 cm    -10 cm    -5 cm    0 cm    I: 5 cm    II: 5 cm    III: 5 cm
1.0000000 0.7249145 0.4576698 0.4154718 0.2931540 2.0946100 0.4506357 0.7401908

```

Fixed effects: Reco ~ WT2 + PC + VD + WT2:PC

	Value	Std.Error	DF	t-value	p-value
(Intercept)	879.2087	68.76806	2226	12.785132	0.0000
WT2-20 cm	-49.8203	30.84637	2226	-1.615111	0.1064
WT2-10 cm	-324.3685	35.65210	2226	-9.098160	0.0000
WT2-5 cm	-415.9649	38.14346	2226	-10.905274	0.0000
WT20 cm	-537.5184	39.83208	2226	-13.494612	0.0000
WT2I: 5 cm	-344.7728	81.89057	2226	-4.210165	0.0000
WT2II: 5 cm	-478.2361	42.39649	2226	-11.280087	0.0000
WT2III: 5 cm	-445.4347	50.23666	2226	-8.866725	0.0000
PCsedges	-189.9956	75.97910	58	-2.500630	0.0152
VDnew	35.1296	10.40136	2226	3.377408	0.0007
VDgrowth	98.4599	15.86092	2226	6.207705	0.0000
WT2-20 cm:PCsedges	-89.7658	46.21191	2226	-1.942483	0.0522
WT2-10 cm:PCsedges	103.4935	52.29199	2226	1.979146	0.0479
WT2-5 cm:PCsedges	46.7592	55.46997	2226	0.842964	0.3993
WT20 cm:PCsedges	69.9097	57.01844	2226	1.226089	0.2203
WT2I: 5 cm:PCsedges	125.8748	115.75435	2226	1.087430	0.2770
WT2II: 5 cm:PCsedges	50.4133	59.78878	2226	0.843190	0.3992
WT2III: 5 cm:PCsedges	13.6652	70.83499	2226	0.192916	0.8470

Correlation:

	(Intr)	WT2-20cm	WT2-10cm	WT2-5cm	WT20cm	WT2I:5cm	WT2II:5cm	WT2III:5cm	PCsds	VDnew	VDgrwt	WT2-20c:	WT2-10c:
WT2-20 cm	-0.439												
WT2-10 cm	-0.532	0.831											
WT2-5 cm	-0.537	0.781	0.931										
WT20 cm	-0.554	0.754	0.912	0.932									
WT2I: 5 cm	-0.194	0.357	0.413	0.448	0.483								
WT2II: 5 cm	-0.528	0.710	0.861	0.878	0.941	0.533							
WT2III: 5 cm	-0.444	0.599	0.726	0.740	0.794	0.463	0.851						
PCsedges	-0.537	0.397	0.482	0.486	0.504	0.178	0.481	0.407					
VDnew	-0.013	-0.008	-0.032	-0.036	-0.172	-0.083	-0.216	-0.185	-0.002				
VDgrowth	-0.014	-0.005	-0.020	-0.024	-0.115	-0.097	-0.188	-0.251	-0.008	0.671			
WT2-20 cm:PCsedges	0.293	-0.667	-0.555	-0.521	-0.503	-0.239	-0.474	-0.400	-0.585	0.006	0.003		
WT2-10 cm:PCsedges	0.363	-0.566	-0.681	-0.635	-0.622	-0.283	-0.587	-0.496	-0.703	0.025	0.018	0.843	
WT2-5 cm:PCsedges	0.369	-0.537	-0.639	-0.686	-0.636	-0.307	-0.598	-0.504	-0.712	0.000	-0.001	0.797	0.938
WT20 cm:PCsedges	0.388	-0.526	-0.634	-0.648	-0.686	-0.333	-0.642	-0.542	-0.742	0.053	0.035	0.778	0.926
WT2I: 5 cm:PCsedges	0.139	-0.252	-0.292	-0.316	-0.333	-0.696	-0.361	-0.302	-0.270	0.003	-0.035	0.378	0.431
WT2II: 5 cm:PCsedges	0.376	-0.502	-0.606	-0.617	-0.641	-0.364	-0.673	-0.567	-0.718	0.002	-0.006	0.742	0.885
WT2III: 5 cm:PCsedges	0.317	-0.424	-0.511	-0.520	-0.541	-0.314	-0.571	-0.671	-0.605	0.003	0.032	0.626	0.747

WT2-5c: WT20c: WT2I:5c: WT2II:5c:

```

WT2-20 cm
WT2-10 cm
WT2-5 cm
WT20 cm
WT2I: 5 cm
WT2II: 5 cm
WT2III: 5 cm
PCsedges
VDnew
VDgrowth
WT2-20 cm:PCsedges
WT2-10 cm:PCsedges
WT2-5 cm:PCsedges
WT20 cm:PCsedges      0.949
WT2I: 5 cm:PCsedges   0.468   0.490
WT2II: 5 cm:PCsedges  0.905   0.943   0.539
WT2III: 5 cm:PCsedges 0.764   0.796   0.460   0.845

Standardized Within-Group Residuals:
      Min      Q1      Med      Q3      Max
-3.6759655 -0.5581056 -0.1555401  0.3558352  7.6213929

Number of Observations: 2302
Number of Groups:
      const tmpcol %in% const
          1          60

```

App-Tab. 3-2: Linear mixed-effects model of GPP vs. water table position, plant composition and vegetation development

```

Linear mixed-effects model fit by REML
Data:
AIC      BIC      logLik
 30774.49 30986.59 -15350.25

Random effects:
Composite Structure: Blocked

Block 1: fSetTemp13°C, fSetTemp16°C, fSetTemp19°C, fSetTemp23°C, fSetTemp18°C
Formula: ~fSetTemp - 1 | const
Structure: Multiple of an Identity
      fSetTemp13°C fSetTemp16°C fSetTemp19°C fSetTemp23°C fSetTemp18°C
StdDev:      318.6713      318.6713      318.6713      318.6713      318.6713

Block 2: Col1, Col2, Col3, Col4, Col5, Col6, Col7, Col8, Col9, Col10, Col11, Col12
Formula: ~Col - 1 | const
Structure: Multiple of an Identity
      Col1      Col2      Col3      Col4      Col5      Col6      Col7      Col8      Col9      Col10
StdDev: 193.8827 193.8827 193.8827 193.8827 193.8827 193.8827 193.8827 193.8827 193.8827 193.8827
      Col11      Col12
StdDev: 193.8827 193.8827

Formula: ~IncDay | tmpcol %in% const
Structure: General positive-definite, Log-Cholesky parametrization
      StdDev      Corr
(Intercept) 3.108603e-03 (Intr)
IncDay      5.999073e-04 -0.003
Residual    2.697821e+02

Correlation Structure: ARMA(2,2)
Formula: ~IncDay | const/tmpcol
Parameter estimate(s):
      Phi1      Phi2      Theta1      Theta2
0.22946731 0.71902027 0.04407699 -0.66868691

Variance function:
Structure: Different standard deviations per stratum
Formula: ~1 | WT2
Parameter estimates:
      -30 cm      -20 cm      -10 cm      -5 cm      0 cm      I: 5 cm      II: 5 cm      III: 5 cm
1.00000000 0.8271283 0.7226829 0.6450219 0.5103796 1.9140388 0.8132554 1.0213585

```

Fixed effects: Gpp ~ WT2 + PC + VD + WT2:PC + PC:VD

	Value	Std.Error	DF	t-value	p-value
(Intercept)	-1700.6340	167.33714	2223	-10.162920	0.0000
WT2-20 cm	33.7321	34.75885	2223	0.970460	0.3319
WT2-10 cm	125.0547	39.49419	2223	3.166407	0.0016
WT2-5 cm	178.3352	42.04479	2223	4.241552	0.0000
WT20 cm	198.8501	44.80543	2223	4.438080	0.0000
WT2I: 5 cm	353.0893	77.74395	2223	4.541694	0.0000
WT2II: 5 cm	439.4027	51.69214	2223	8.500378	0.0000
WT2III: 5 cm	416.3922	67.59096	2223	6.160471	0.0000
PCsedges	98.1803	124.84820	58	0.786397	0.4348
VDnew	24.8917	26.84257	2223	0.927323	0.3539
VDgrowth	-22.7884	45.63318	2223	-0.499382	0.6176
WT2-20 cm:PCsedges	73.2600	52.13255	2223	1.405264	0.1601
WT2-10 cm:PCsedges	64.2640	57.83319	2223	1.111197	0.2666
WT2-5 cm:PCsedges	67.6866	60.78289	2223	1.113580	0.2656
WT20 cm:PCsedges	50.4594	63.06677	2223	0.800094	0.4237
WT2I: 5 cm:PCsedges	-75.6494	111.19040	2223	-0.680359	0.4963
WT2II: 5 cm:PCsedges	23.0777	74.54436	2223	0.309583	0.7569
WT2III: 5 cm:PCsedges	-26.8536	95.91956	2223	-0.279960	0.7795
PCsedges:VDnew	-105.6191	37.78537	2223	-2.795239	0.0052
PCsedges:VDgrowth	-249.6037	61.12795	2223	-4.083298	0.0000

Correlation:

	(Intr)	WT2-20cm	WT2-10cm	WT2-5cm	WT20cm	WT2I:5cm	WT2II:5cm	WT2III:5cm	PCsds
WT2-20 cm	-0.161								
WT2-10 cm	-0.181	0.758							
WT2-5 cm	-0.186	0.679	0.823						
WT20 cm	-0.183	0.627	0.746	0.801					
WT2I: 5 cm	-0.102	0.368	0.448	0.496	0.644				
WT2II: 5 cm	-0.160	0.541	0.643	0.676	0.844	0.651			
WT2III: 5 cm	-0.123	0.413	0.490	0.513	0.640	0.464	0.742		
PCsedges	-0.368	0.216	0.243	0.249	0.245	0.137	0.215	0.165	
VDnew	-0.006	-0.030	-0.091	-0.107	-0.425	-0.284	-0.487	-0.378	0.008
VDgrowth	-0.004	-0.019	-0.058	-0.071	-0.265	-0.238	-0.428	-0.591	0.005
WT2-20 cm:PCsedges	0.108	-0.667	-0.505	-0.453	-0.418	-0.245	-0.361	-0.276	-0.326
WT2-10 cm:PCsedges	0.124	-0.518	-0.683	-0.562	-0.510	-0.306	-0.439	-0.335	-0.364
WT2-5 cm:PCsedges	0.129	-0.470	-0.570	-0.692	-0.554	-0.343	-0.467	-0.355	-0.374
WT20 cm:PCsedges	0.130	-0.445	-0.530	-0.569	-0.710	-0.457	-0.600	-0.455	-0.375
WT2I: 5 cm:PCsedges	0.071	-0.257	-0.314	-0.347	-0.451	-0.698	-0.456	-0.325	-0.206
WT2II: 5 cm:PCsedges	0.111	-0.375	-0.446	-0.469	-0.585	-0.451	-0.694	-0.515	-0.320
WT2III: 5 cm:PCsedges	0.087	-0.291	-0.345	-0.362	-0.451	-0.327	-0.523	-0.705	-0.249
PCsedges:VDnew	0.004	0.021	0.065	0.076	0.302	0.201	0.346	0.269	-0.010
PCsedges:VDgrowth	0.003	0.014	0.043	0.053	0.198	0.178	0.320	0.441	-0.008

VDnew VDgrwt WT2-20c: WT2-10c: WT2-5c: WT20c: WT2I:5c: WT2II:5c: WT2III:5c:

```

WT2-20 cm
WT2-10 cm
WT2-5 cm
WT20 cm
WT2I: 5 cm
WT2II: 5 cm
WT2III: 5 cm
PCsedges
VDnew
VDgrowth          0.588
WT2-20 cm:PCsedges 0.020  0.013
WT2-10 cm:PCsedges 0.062  0.039  0.778
WT2-5 cm:PCsedges  0.074  0.049  0.705   0.838
WT20 cm:PCsedges   0.301  0.188  0.666   0.774   0.844
WT2I: 5 cm:PCsedges 0.199  0.167  0.385   0.459   0.523   0.646
WT2II: 5 cm:PCsedges 0.338  0.297  0.561   0.649   0.705   0.835   0.663
WT2III: 5 cm:PCsedges 0.266  0.416  0.435   0.503   0.545   0.644   0.485   0.750
PCsedges:VDnew     -0.711 -0.418 -0.020  -0.060  -0.114 -0.341 -0.285  -0.480  -0.380
PCsedges:VDgrowth  -0.440 -0.747 -0.014  -0.042  -0.082 -0.232 -0.266  -0.441  -0.548
                PCsds:VDn

```

```

WT2-20 cm
WT2-10 cm
WT2-5 cm
WT20 cm
WT2I: 5 cm
WT2II: 5 cm
WT2III: 5 cm
PCsedges
VDnew
VDgrowth
WT2-20 cm:PCsedges
WT2-10 cm:PCsedges
WT2-5 cm:PCsedges
WT20 cm:PCsedges
WT2I: 5 cm:PCsedges
WT2II: 5 cm:PCsedges
WT2III: 5 cm:PCsedges
PCsedges:VDnew
PCsedges:VDgrowth    0.626

```

```

Standardized Within-Group Residuals:
          Min          Q1          Med          Q3          Max
-4.47736930 -0.52792792  0.06070962  0.65242000  6.09674203

```

Number of Observations: 2301

Number of Groups:

```

const tmpcol %in% const
          1          60

```

App-Tab. 3-3: Linear mixed-effects model of NEE vs. water table position, plant composition and vegetation development

```

Linear mixed-effects model fit by REML
Data:
      AIC      BIC    logLik
31583.56 31774.31 -15758.78

Random effects:
Composite Structure: Blocked

Block 1: fSetTemp13°C, fSetTemp16°C, fSetTemp19°C, fSetTemp23°C, fSetTemp18°C
Formula: ~fSetTemp - 1 | const
Structure: Multiple of an Identity
      fSetTemp13°C fSetTemp16°C fSetTemp19°C fSetTemp23°C fSetTemp18°C
StdDev:      291.784      291.784      291.784      291.784      291.784

Block 2: Col1, Col2, Col3, Col4, Col5, Col6, Col7, Col8, Col9, Col10, Col11, Col12
Formula: ~Col - 1 | const
Structure: Multiple of an Identity
      Col1      Col2      Col3      Col4      Col5      Col6      Col7      Col8      Col9      Col10      Col11      Col12
StdDev: 98.48247 98.48247 98.48247 98.48247 98.48247 98.48247 98.48247 98.48247 98.48247 98.48247 98.48247 98.48247

Formula: ~IncDay | tmpcol %in% const
Structure: General positive-definite, Log-Cholesky parametrization
      StdDev      Corr
(Intercept) 153.090041 (Intr)
IncDay      1.354528 -0.982
Residual    204.204147

Correlation Structure: ARMA(2,0)
Formula: ~IncDay | const/tmpcol
Parameter estimate(s):
      Phi1      Phi2
0.2649724 0.5237186
Variance function:
Structure: Different standard deviations per stratum
Formula: ~1 | WT2
Parameter estimates:
      -30 cm      -20 cm      -10 cm      -5 cm      0 cm      I: 5 cm      II: 5 cm      III: 5 cm
1.0000000 1.0263520 0.9015053 0.7607270 0.7097454 0.9124931 0.9227550 1.1028512

```

Fixed effects: Nee ~ WT2 + PC + VD + WT2:PC

	Value	Std.Error	DF	t-value	p-value
(Intercept)	-846.9533	139.98114	2335	-6.050481	0.0000
WT2-20 cm	-12.4858	29.42494	2335	-0.424327	0.6714
WT2-10 cm	-173.8104	31.63231	2335	-5.494712	0.0000
WT2-5 cm	-214.7512	34.30480	2335	-6.260093	0.0000
WT20 cm	-279.1706	39.27464	2335	-7.108165	0.0000
WT2I: 5 cm	73.4113	46.69054	2335	1.572295	0.1160
WT2II: 5 cm	46.7366	50.40090	2335	0.927296	0.3539
WT2III: 5 cm	128.7508	66.78759	2335	1.927766	0.0540
PCsedges	-111.8900	72.39522	58	-1.545544	0.1277
VDnew	22.4122	18.85621	2335	1.188587	0.2347
VDgrowth	-75.3426	28.93350	2335	-2.603992	0.0093
WT2-20 cm:PCsedges	-9.2505	43.13842	2335	-0.214438	0.8302
WT2-10 cm:PCsedges	173.1122	45.74360	2335	3.784402	0.0002
WT2-5 cm:PCsedges	130.0009	48.91614	2335	2.657628	0.0079
WT20 cm:PCsedges	92.2080	53.21037	2335	1.732896	0.0832
WT2I: 5 cm:PCsedges	120.5596	62.50064	2335	1.928934	0.0539
WT2II: 5 cm:PCsedges	-26.5836	67.58520	2335	-0.393334	0.6941
WT2III: 5 cm:PCsedges	-206.0051	90.42299	2335	-2.278239	0.0228

Correlation:

	(Intr)	WT2-20cm	WT2-10cm	WT2-5cm	WT20cm	WT2I:5cm	WT2II:5cm	WT2III:5cm	PCsds	VDnew	VDgrwt	WT2-20c:	WT2-10c:	WT2-5c:
WT2-20 cm	-0.133													
WT2-10 cm	-0.165	0.616												
WT2-5 cm	-0.177	0.541	0.709											
WT20 cm	-0.181	0.507	0.655	0.731										
WT2I: 5 cm	-0.170	0.454	0.600	0.670	0.833									
WT2II: 5 cm	-0.179	0.452	0.612	0.694	0.845	0.851								
WT2III: 5 cm	-0.157	0.372	0.517	0.598	0.730	0.729	0.816							
PCsedges	-0.253	0.257	0.318	0.342	0.354	0.333	0.355	0.320						
VDnew	-0.008	-0.025	-0.067	-0.072	-0.326	-0.350	-0.335	-0.254	-0.002					
VDgrowth	-0.013	-0.007	-0.027	-0.024	-0.192	-0.220	-0.265	-0.348	-0.024	0.678				
WT2-20 cm:PCsedges	0.090	-0.682	-0.420	-0.369	-0.347	-0.311	-0.312	-0.262	-0.389	0.024	0.029			
WT2-10 cm:PCsedges	0.113	-0.425	-0.691	-0.489	-0.452	-0.414	-0.426	-0.368	-0.473	0.047	0.053	0.641		
WT2-5 cm:PCsedges	0.124	-0.377	-0.491	-0.695	-0.489	-0.445	-0.468	-0.418	-0.518	-0.016	0.020	0.571	0.723	
WT20 cm:PCsedges	0.134	-0.370	-0.473	-0.527	-0.690	-0.565	-0.581	-0.522	-0.548	0.101	0.102	0.555	0.691	0.783
WT2I: 5 cm:PCsedges	0.128	-0.331	-0.429	-0.480	-0.535	-0.654	-0.551	-0.492	-0.521	-0.002	0.030	0.498	0.631	0.720
WT2II: 5 cm:PCsedges	0.136	-0.331	-0.440	-0.501	-0.551	-0.549	-0.663	-0.543	-0.549	0.005	0.021	0.496	0.644	0.748
WT2III: 5 cm:PCsedges	0.119	-0.272	-0.373	-0.433	-0.486	-0.478	-0.535	-0.661	-0.479	0.007	0.038	0.407	0.544	0.647

WT20c: WT2I:5c: WT2II:5c:

WT2-20 cm  
 WT2-10 cm  
 WT2-5 cm  
 WT20 cm  
 WT2I: 5 cm  
 WT2II: 5 cm  
 WT2III: 5 cm  
 PCsedges  
 VDnew  
 VDgrowth  
 WT2-20 cm:PCsedges  
 WT2-10 cm:PCsedges  
 WT2-5 cm:PCsedges  
 WT20 cm:PCsedges  
 WT2I: 5 cm:PCsedges 0.813  
 WT2II: 5 cm:PCsedges 0.834 0.839  
 WT2III: 5 cm:PCsedges 0.732 0.729 0.808

Standardized Within-Group Residuals:

Min	Q1	Med	Q3	Max
-3.830207970	-0.611773096	0.000192129	0.558488180	5.007098497

Number of Observations: 2411

Number of Groups:

const	tmpcol	%in%	const
1			60

App-Tab. 3-4: Linear mixed-effects model of CH<sub>4</sub> vs. water table position, plant composition and vegetation development

Linear mixed-effects model fit by REML

Data:

	AIC	BIC	logLik
	3303.917	3461.916	-1618.958

Random effects:

Formula: ~IncDay | Col

Structure: General positive-definite, Log-Cholesky parametrization

	StdDev	Corr
(Intercept)	0.292191835	(Intr)
IncDay	0.007020128	-1

(Intercept) 0.292191835 (Intr)

IncDay 0.007020128 -1

Formula: ~IncDay | fSetTemp %in% Col

Structure: General positive-definite, Log-Cholesky parametrization

	StdDev	Corr
(Intercept)	0.227610400	(Intr)
IncDay	0.004785474	-0.999
Residual	0.363842637	

(Intercept) 0.227610400 (Intr)

IncDay 0.004785474 -0.999

Residual 0.363842637

Correlation Structure: ARMA(2,2)

Formula: ~1 | Col/fSetTemp

Parameter estimate(s):

	Phi1	Phi2	Theta1	Theta2
	1.8431830	-0.9186435	-1.6667139	0.7596506

1.8431830 -0.9186435 -1.6667139 0.7596506

Variance function:

Structure: Different standard deviations per stratum

Formula: ~1 | WT3

Parameter estimates:

	<0	0	5.1	5.2	5.3
	1.000000	3.068926	6.820151	27.242741	17.012223

1.000000 3.068926 6.820151 27.242741 17.012223



```

PCsedges
VDnew
VDgrowth
WT2-20 cm
WT2-10 cm
WT2-5 cm
WT20 cm
WT2I: 5 cm
WT2II: 5 cm
WT2III: 5 cm
PCsedges:WT2-20 cm
PCsedges:WT2-10 cm
PCsedges:WT2-5 cm
PCsedges:WT20 cm
PCsedges:WT2I: 5 cm
PCsedges:WT2II: 5 cm  0.271
PCsedges:WT2III: 5 cm  0.109      0.254

```

```

Standardized Within-Group Residuals:
      Min      Q1      Med      Q3      Max
-4.50038831 -0.41983925 -0.04052017  0.27097536 13.82819651

```

Number of Observations: 905

```

Number of Groups:
      Col fSetTemp %in% Col
      12          30

```

## Chapter 4: Publication III

### High heterotrophic respiration but low methane and nitrous oxide emissions from peat grassland mesocosms under alternating wet-dry conditions

*authors:*

M. Hahn-Schöfl<sup>1</sup>, A. Thuille<sup>1</sup>, G. Schöfl<sup>2</sup>, A. Freibauer<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Max Planck Institute for Biogeochemistry, Hans-Knöll-Strasse 10, D-07745 Jena

<sup>2</sup> DKMS Life Science Lab GmbH, Fiedlerstrasse 34, D-01037 Dresden

<sup>3</sup> Thünen Institute of Climate-Smart Agriculture, Bundesallee 50, D-38116 Braunschweig

*status:*

draft manuscript, submission planned

*own contributions:*

- design and implementation of experimental set-up
- design and construction of all devices
- calculation of CO<sub>2</sub> flux rates from raw data
- modelling of daily CO<sub>2</sub> flux rates
- statistical analysis of all data
- graphical presentation
- data interpretation and discussion of results
- planning and writing of the publication

*contributions by co-authors:*

- peat sampling and installation in climate chamber (A. Thuille)
- supervision of the experiment during maternity leave of M. Hahn-Schöfl (A. Thuille)
- calculation of CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O flux rates from raw data (A. Thuille)
- development of procedure for CO<sub>2</sub> flux calculation from raw data (G. Schöfl)
- supervision of PhD thesis (A. Freibauer)

## Abstract

The rewetting of drained peatlands should aim at a minimum CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> release. In order to test if alternating water tables are suitable low-GHG management strategies we performed a mesocosm experiment with bog and fen grasslands quantifying the short-term response of CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O to alternating water tables, observing the response time and the memory effect of previous stress.

The vegetation of the mesocosms was not adapted to permanently flooded conditions but coped remarkably well with the strong water stress. While gross primary production (GPP) was unaffected by water table changes, ecosystem respiration (R<sub>eco</sub>) reacted very fast with a duplication to triplication under dry conditions due to decomposition of the accumulated plant litter and probably stimulated peat mineralization. Net ecosystem exchange (NEE) was dominated by water-table driven variation in heterotrophic soil respiration. Intermittent dry conditions for a one week fully recovered the oxidative status in the peat soils and, consequently, CH<sub>4</sub> flux rates were low despite the large amount of dead biomass and warm conditions. N<sub>2</sub>O emissions remained low and were unaffected by water table changes. Peat grasslands were a GHG sink under wet conditions (+5 cm), however, dry conditions (-45 cm) turned the grasslands into a GHG source due to increased heterotrophic respiration. There was no legacy effect regarding redox potential and CH<sub>4</sub> fluxes. CO<sub>2</sub> emissions showed a small legacy effect of previous wet-dry cycles by mobilization of easily oxidizable carbon.

## 1. Introduction

50 % of European peatlands have been drained for agriculture (Augustin 2001; Joosten and Couwenberg 2001; Drösler et al. 2008), mainly as grassland for forage production. Drained agricultural peatlands are hotspots of CO<sub>2</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (Augustin 2001; Drösler et al. 2008; Joosten 2010). In Europe, drained peatlands are increasingly restored by rewetting, i.e. by raising the groundwater table, with the explicit goal to reduce anthropogenic greenhouse gas (GHG) emissions (Höper et al. 2008). It remains controversial, however, how much of the CO<sub>2</sub> emission reduction by slowed down peat mineralization is compensated by increased methane release in wet conditions (Höper 2007; Couwenberg et al. 2008). Flooding can boost CH<sub>4</sub> emissions, in particular when plants die that are not adapted to excess water stress (Joosten and Couwenberg 2009; Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2011). Thus, rewetting activities should aim at a minimum CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> release.

Peat oxidation requires aerobic conditions and tends to increase with drainage depth (Joosten and Couwenberg 2009). Ecosystem respiration was linearly correlated with water table level in histic Gleysols (Leiber-Sauheitl et al. 2014). Highest N<sub>2</sub>O emissions have been found at intermediate soil moisture content (Kasimir-Klemedtsson et al. 1997) at intermediate drainage levels around -50 cm below surface (Drösler et al. 2011); N<sub>2</sub>O emissions only occur at mean water table below -20 cm below surface (Couwenberg et al. 2008) when both nitrification and denitrification processes can occur. In contrast, methanogenesis occurs at strictly anaerobic conditions (Kasimir-Klemedtsson et al. 1997; Dalal and Allen 2008; Drösler et al. 2008). In practice, water table fluctuates seasonally and is driven by rain events and water management. High field CH<sub>4</sub> emissions were observed in warm conditions with highly active vegetation. The reasons confirmed by laboratory studies include high biological activity under a period of extended flooding for several weeks or more, and active formation of an organic sediment layer from dead, easily degradable plant material (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2011; Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014).

A challenge comparable to the rewetting of drained peatlands has been tackled in paddy rice fields where intermittent rather than continuous flooding has significantly reduced CH<sub>4</sub> emissions (UN-FAO 2010; Uprety et al. 2012; Siopongco et al. 2013). Intermittent drainage restores the redox equivalents in soils (Estop-Aragonés and Blodau 2012) so that it takes weeks of flooding before the soil returns to conditions suitable for methanogenesis. On the other hand, strong water table fluctuations may mobilize organic matter in soil by drying and rewetting (Kasimir-Klemedtsson et al. 1997), making the peat more vulnerable to decomposition. In an intermittent wet-dry regime the soil remains for long periods in a redox state optimal for denitrification and consequently, at high risk of N<sub>2</sub>O emissions, e.g. as found in mineral soils (Flessa et al. 1998).

Guidance for low GHG rewetting strategies requires improved knowledge about the dynamic response of vegetation with low flooding tolerance and of the GHG forming and consuming processes in soil in reaction to changing water table and redox status (Fig. 1).

To test whether mitigation strategies for rice paddies can also be applied in peatlands, this study aimed at systematically quantifying the GHG response of peat grasslands to periodic, intermittent wet-dry cycles. We performed a mesocosm experiment under constant meteorological conditions and compared two lowland grassland communities on fen and bog peat under short and long water table alternation cycles. In particular, we addressed the following questions:

1. How do grassland vegetation, photosynthesis, respiration, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes react to a dynamic change in the water table from wet to dry conditions and vice versa? How do wet respectively dry conditions affect the net GHG balance?
2. Is the response fully reversible when water table switches back to the original position, and repeatable? Is there a memory effect of previous flooding or drainage events?
3. What length of interim dry periods is needed to effectively reduce CH<sub>4</sub> emissions?
4. Do wet-dry cycles foster N<sub>2</sub>O emissions?
5. Can alternating water tables work as low-GHG management strategies in peat grasslands?

## 2. Material and Methods

### 2.1. Site description

For the experiment we selected two drained and intensively managed grassland sites on peat soils.

#### **Bog grassland**

The peat bog complex Ahlen–Falkenberger Moor is located approximately 80 km northwest of the city of Hamburg (Northern Germany, 53°41' N and 8°49' E). The climate is humid atlantic-temperate with an average annual precipitation of 925.7 mm and an average annual temperature of 8.5 °C (source: German Weather Service). The bog is 3.3 m deep. The uppermost 15 cm comprise a strongly humified degraded bog peat, the subjacent layer consists of 1.25 m poorly humified “white” bog peat and thereunder lies a strongly humified “black” bog peat. The sampling site is an intensively managed grassland for dairy farming, fertilized and cut 4-5 times per year (for site characteristics see Table 1). The mean water table is located ~60 cm below the surface. The samples were taken on the same intensive grassland field as in (Beetz et al. 2013; Frank et al. 2014).

## Fen grassland

The fen grassland samples were taken in the “Freisinger Moos”. The site is located in the vicinity of the town Freising (Southern Germany, 48°37’N and 11°69’E) and has a temperate climate with an average annual precipitation of 788 mm and an average annual air temperature of 7.5°C (source: Agrarmeteorologie Bayern). The fen grassland is intensively managed for dairy forage, fertilized and cut 2-3 times per year (more details see Table 1). The mean water table is approximately 60 cm below the surface. Samples from this site have been used in previous incubation experiments (“grasses” treatment in (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014).

## 2.2. Experimental set up

Six intact soil mesocosms with vegetation were taken from the two above described sites at the end of March 2009. Each mesocosm was extracted by completely inserting a PVC tube (inner diameter = 16 cm, height = 50 cm) into the soil with a hydraulic drill and removing it by spade.

The incubation lasted for 196 days in a climate chamber (York Deutschland GmbH, Mannheim, Germany) at temperature and radiation conditions of a sunny spring day which aimed to give an idea of the potential CO<sub>2</sub> production respectively fixation and CH<sub>4</sub> formation. Conditions were the same as in (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014). In brief, diurnal cycles ranged from 13°C to 23°C for air temperature with a mean of 16°C and 0 to 1200 μmol m<sup>-2</sup> s<sup>-1</sup> for photosynthetic active radiation (PAR). Daily sum of PAR was about 32.1\*10<sup>6</sup> μmol m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> with some spatio-temporal variation.

During flooded periods, a basin (transparent acrylic glass; 35 x 35 x 7 cm) attached and sealed to the top of each PVC tube contained the supernatant water (referred to as inundation tank). During flux measurements, the measurement chamber was attached to the inundation tank (Fig. 4-2).

The water table in the mesocosms was maintained at +5 cm by means of sensor-controlled pumps connected to water canisters which ensured a continuous supply of tap water. The water level was manually lowered to -45 cm by means of vacuum pumps (Mobile Oil and Fluid Extractor TP69, Sealy Power Products, UK). Three replicates from each of the grassland sites were subjected to two different dynamic water regimes:

- short cycles: the water level was maintained at +5 cm for 7 days (referred to as wet phase thereafter) followed by a 14 days dry phase (water level at -45 cm). These wet-dry phases were repeated 9 times.
- long cycles: the water level was kept at +5 cm for 42 days (wet phase) followed by 7 days at -45 cm (dry phase). These wet-dry phases were repeated 4 times. When comparing the two water regimes the long cycles regime is referred to as extended flooding.

## 2.3. Measurements and data analysis

### Terminology and definitions

Net CO<sub>2</sub> exchange is the sum of CO<sub>2</sub> uptake by photosynthesis and the simultaneous release of CO<sub>2</sub> by auto- and heterotrophic respiration: Net ecosystem exchange (NEE) = gross primary production (GPP) + ecosystem respiration (R<sub>eco</sub>). Negative CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes signify the removal of CO<sub>2</sub> from the atmosphere and its incorporation into the plant/soil – i.e. a positive climatic effect. Positive NEE values indicate a release of CO<sub>2</sub> from the ecosystem into the atmosphere – i.e. a negative effect with

respect to its climate impact.

### **Environmental conditions and soil parameters**

The experimental set up and measurements methods were identical to (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014) and were repeated here using samples from other peatland sites. They are described briefly in this publication, for further details consult (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014). The mesocosms were insulated and cooled to ensure soil temperature profiles similar to those of the Freising field site (experimental set-up illustrated in Fig. 4-2). To avoid drying-out of the topsoil, the mesocosms received 90 to 300 ml tap water depending on the water table position.

Air temperature and photosynthetically active radiation (PAR) within the climate chamber as well as soil temperatures and redox potentials in the mesocosms were logged over the entire incubation duration. The measured redox potentials were converted to the potential in relation to the standard hydrogen electrode (Calmano 2010), however, not corrected for pH.

The redox potential gives a qualitative value representing the soil state (Pansu and Gautheyrou 2006) and indicates suitable conditions for methane production (Fiedler 1999). Hence, redox data may be used for the interpretation of CH<sub>4</sub> emissions. We assume that at a redox potential of -150 mV the conditions are favourable for CH<sub>4</sub> production<sup>20</sup>.

The vegetation developed during the 7 weeks pre-incubation (air temperature 17 to 21 °C) and was cut to a uniform length of 10 cm at incubation start. This cut strongly influenced the vegetation development during the first 2 to 3 weeks and had its effect during further 6 to 8 weeks. The vegetation was regularly checked for pest infestation and treated with biological pest control when necessary. Vegetation development was documented by means of photos (Sony DSC-F828, f=50mm, Sony Europe Ltd., Berlin, Germany). Bulk density and pore volume of the peat soil as well as dry weight and leaf area index of above ground biomass were determined at incubation end.

### **CO<sub>2</sub> exchange**

Gas flux measurements were performed using a dynamic closed chamber system and a CO<sub>2</sub> infra-red gas analyser (model LI-6262, LI-COR Biosciences, Lincoln, USA) for in-situ measurement. The measurement method, chamber design and procedure for semi-automated quality-controlled CO<sub>2</sub> flux calculations are described in detail in (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014). This measurement method has also been used for field measurements on various German field sites (Drösler 2005; Drösler et al. 2011; Beetz et al. 2013; Leiber-Sauheitel et al. 2014).

The experiment lasted for 196 days and CO<sub>2</sub> flux measurements were performed at the 13, 16, 18, 19, 23°C temperature levels with a total of 180 (short cycles) and 135 (long cycles) measurements per grassland site.

Daily R<sub>eco</sub>, GPP, NEE were modelled based on the equation according to (Lloyd and Taylor 1994) and (Michaelis and Menten 1913) as well as the actual air and soil temperatures and PAR logged in the climate chamber.

### **CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions**

The static closed chamber method combined with analysis by gas chromatography was used for measurement of CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions from the mesocosm surface (methodology described in detail in (Drösler 2005; Drösler et al. 2011; Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014). Gas sampling was done at the

---

<sup>20</sup> In a previous experiment (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014), the phase between 0 and -150 mV was quickly passed and, therefore, the threshold for methanogenesis was assumed at 0 mV.

19°C temperature level at short cycles (total of 77 measurements per grassland site) and at the 13 and 23°C temperature levels at long cycles (total of 73 measurements) due to logistical reasons. A previous experiment (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014) showed only a small inconsistent temperature response of CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes.

### CO<sub>2</sub> equivalents

The calculation of CO<sub>2</sub> equivalents was done using the 100-year global warming potentials (GWP) relative to CO<sub>2</sub> (IPCC 2007) (CO<sub>2</sub> = daily NEE modelled with soil temperature in -2 cm depth, 1 g CH<sub>4</sub> = 25 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ., and 1 g N<sub>2</sub>O = 298 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ.). Adding up the CO<sub>2</sub> equivalents of the three GHGs results in the GHG balance. The first wet-dry phase was excluded from graphical display as it cannot be compared to later wet-dry phases due to vegetation growth (Fig. 4-12; see also vegetation results).

## 2.4. Statistical analysis

CO<sub>2</sub> flux calculations, modelling of daily R<sub>eco</sub>/GPP/NEE, general data manipulation and all graphics were done using the R statistical environment (R Core Team 2013).

Differences between bog and fen were tested with Wilcoxon rank-sum test for all parameters with more than 6 values. Cumulative and static parameters were observed in three replicates, which were considered a too small number to robustly apply statistics.

## 3. Results

### 3.1. Vegetation

Vegetation in bog and fen mesocosms was mainly composed of grass species typical for intensively used lowland meadows but not adapted to high water table (Tab. 4-1).

After a pre-incubation for 7 weeks the vegetation was cut to a length of 10 cm shortly before incubation start as vegetation in the 12 mesocosms had developed differently. This cut affected vegetation growth at incubation start. The vegetation was still in an intensive growth phase in the first 2 to 3 weeks of the experiment and was still growing during the subsequent 6 to 8 weeks.

#### *Short cycles*

Total dry weight (dw), living and dead biomass at incubation end tended to be higher in bog ( $1.0 \pm 0.2$  kg dw m<sup>-2</sup>) than in fen grassland ( $0.6 \pm 0.3$  kg dw m<sup>-2</sup>) (see Fig. 4-3; for detailed data see App-Tab. 4-1 in the Appendix). Both grasslands were dominated by brown biomass (bog: 61 %; fen: 62 %) while green biomass accounted for one third of biomass (bog: 31 %; fen: 37 %). The amount of other dead matter – mainly dead roots – was higher in bog mesocosms (on average 8 % of total bog biomass) than in fen (1 % of total fen biomass). Algae were observed in one bog mesocosm only (0.03 % of total bog biomass).

Leaf area index (LAI) measured at incubation end confirmed the biomass results. LAI in bog mesocosms was  $7.2 \pm 0.3$  m<sup>2</sup> m<sup>-2</sup> and was dominated by died-off leaves (68 % brown and 32% green leaves). In the fen mesocosms, LAI was  $4.7 \pm 2.6$  m<sup>2</sup> m<sup>-2</sup> with the same green/brown distribution as in bog (68 % brown and 32% green leaves).

### *Long cycles*

The total dry weight (dw) at incubation end was four times higher in bog ( $1.3 \pm 0.4 \text{ kg dw m}^{-2}$ ) than in fen grassland ( $0.3 \pm 0.1 \text{ kg dw m}^{-2}$ ) (Fig. 4-3). Green biomass was similar in bog and fen grassland. Consequently, the fraction of green biomass in bog mesocosms (20 % of total bog biomass) was half of the one in fen mesocosms (44 % of total fen biomass). 10 times more brown biomass was present in bog mesocosms (61 % of total bog biomass) than in fen mesocosms where the brown leaves fraction (41 % of total fen biomass) was approximately the same as the green leaves fraction. The amount of other dead matter – mainly dead roots – was 16 % in bog and 15 % in fen mesocosms. Algae growing in the inundation tank were present only in the bog mesocosms and accounted for 3 % of total bog biomass.

Leaf area index (LAI) at incubation end was four times higher in the bog grassland ( $7.8 \pm 1.4 \text{ m}^2 \text{ m}^{-2}$ ) and dominated by died-off leaves (78 % brown and 22 % green leaves). In fen grassland, mean LAI was  $2.5 \pm 1.0 \text{ m}^2 \text{ m}^{-2}$  with 46 % brown and 54 % green leaves. The LAI results confirmed the biomass results.

## **3.2. Redox potentials**

Redox potential measurements are, amongst others, influenced by pH. As the  $E_h$ /pH slope varies within different chemical systems and the pH dependent error highly varies between authors, the correction of redox data for pH is controversial (Fiedler et al. 2007)(personnal communication with Sabine Fiedler). Therefore, we did not correct the measured redox potentials for pH. Based on the Nernst equation, lower  $E_h$  is predicted at higher pH values (Schüring et al. 1999; Fiedler et al. 2007). The bog grassland had a significantly lower pH (see Tab. 4-1) and redox potentials were in general more positive compared to the fen grassland (see Fig. 4-4 and 4-5). Due to their differences in pH the redox potentials in bog and fen grassland cannot directly be compared.

The redox potential quickly reacted to dry and wet phases with most changes happening in the first week after water regime shift. The temporal patterns and the magnitude of redox shifts were surprisingly well reproduced in the nine (short cycles) or four (long cycles) wet-dry cycles so that there was no indication of legacy effects or pool depletion of redox substances.

### *Short cycles*

The redox potential rapidly decreased during wet periods and increased even faster during dry periods. The fluctuations between dry and wet periods in both grasslands were smaller at incubation start but became more pronounced and recovered more rapidly with proceeding incubation (Fig. 4-4). At -5 cm depth, the redox potential decreased during wet periods to around 0 mV (bog) and to 0 to -170 mV (fen) and increased in dry periods to 600 to 700 mV (bog and fen).

In the fen grassland the redox potentials were mainly above the methanogenesis threshold of -150 mV except for two occasions during wet phases.

### *Long cycles*

In the wet periods, the redox potentials rapidly decreased during the first week after rewetting followed by a long phase of slowly decreasing or stable redox potential (Fig. 4-5). During dry weeks the redox potentials rapidly rose back to the level of the preceding dry phase or even beyond.

The redox potential at -5 cm depth was generally higher in the bog grassland. In the first wet phase, redox potentials at -5 cm were 500 to -75 mV in the bog and 0 to -220 mV in the fen. During dry

phases, they reached values around 600 mV in the bog while in the fen, redox values were around 0 mV during the first two dry phases and increased to a maximum of 460 mV during the last dry period (see Fig. 4-5). In the topsoil of the fen grassland conditions were favourable for methanogenesis within 20 days or less after onset of the wet phase.

The redox potential at -20 cm depth was also lower in the fen grassland. In the bog, the redox potential at -20 cm started at 500 mV and continuously decreased to -24 mV during the first wet period. During the subsequent wet periods, it rapidly decreased when re-wetting started, stayed relatively stable at 0 mV thereafter. With each dry phase, the redox potential in bog increased (from 250 to 500 mV). The fluctuations between wet and dry periods at -20 cm depth were very small in the fen grassland: the redox potential at -20 cm decreased gradually from incubation start (190 mV) until the end of the third wet period (-230 mV). Conditions at -20 cm depth were favourable for methanogenesis during the second and third wet phase. In the third dry period, the redox potential increased again to a maximum of 0 mV and continuously decreased in the subsequent wet phase (to -155 mV).

### 3.3. CO<sub>2</sub> exchange

Due to vegetation development the first wet phase in both experiments is not fully comparable to later cycles.  $R_{eco}$  reacted immediately to dry and wet phases reaching a new plateau at the day of water table shift. GPP was unrelated to water table changes but was affected by vegetation growth (see below). NEE response was dominated by  $R_{eco}$  except for the first wet-dry phase. The amplitude of the plateau shifts tended to increase over the nine (short cycles) or four (long cycles) wet-dry cycles due to increasing  $R_{eco}$  in the dry phases. This indicates a legacy effect of previous wet-dry cycles by mobilization of easily oxidizable carbon.

In long cycles and in the first half of short cycles, NEE of the bog grassland remained more negative than those of the fen grassland because the higher GPP was only compensated to 59 % on average by higher  $R_{eco}$ .

#### *Short cycles*

Daily  $R_{eco}$  remained low as expected during wet phases. In fen grassland it remained at  $\sim 3 \text{ g C m}^{-2} \text{ d}^{-1}$  while it was significantly higher and showed an increasing tendency in the bog grassland ( $4.9$  to  $7.4 \text{ g C m}^{-2} \text{ d}^{-1}$ ). During dry phases,  $R_{eco}$  was significantly higher than in wet phases but not different between bog ( $8.4$  to  $12.9 \text{ g C m}^{-2} \text{ d}^{-1}$ ) and fen ( $5.3$  to  $12.1 \text{ g C m}^{-2} \text{ d}^{-1}$ ) grassland.  $R_{eco}$  in dry phases showed an increasing tendency over the incubation period. Ecosystem respiration increased abruptly at the change from wet to dry phases (Fig. 4-6 top) by  $5$  to  $7 \text{ g C m}^{-2} \text{ d}^{-1}$ , equivalent to a duplication (bog) and more than triplication (fen) of  $R_{eco}$ .

GPP increased in the bog during the first 80 incubation days (until dry phase 4) simultaneously with growing vegetation (Fig. 4-6 centre) and slightly decreased thereafter (means ranged from  $-3.6$  to  $-13.1 \text{ g C m}^{-2} \text{ d}^{-1}$  in wet phases and from  $-11.3$  to  $-14.6 \text{ g C m}^{-2} \text{ d}^{-1}$  in dry phases). Daily GPP continuously increased in the fen grassland during the first 80 days (Fig. 4-6 centre, increase until dry phase 4) and remained relatively stable thereafter. In the fen grassland, mean daily GPP ranged from  $-3.2$  to  $-11.5 \text{ g C m}^{-2} \text{ d}^{-1}$  in wet phases and from  $-5.8$  to  $-12.1 \text{ g C m}^{-2} \text{ d}^{-1}$  in dry phases. There were no differences in daily GPP between dry and wet phases in both grasslands. In agreement with its higher vegetation biomass, the bog grassland had a tendency of higher GPP than the fen grassland.

Daily NEE remained a net CO<sub>2</sub> sink in bog grassland except for the first wet cycle (low GPP due to recovering vegetation after cut) and the last two dry phases (when R<sub>eco</sub> was highest). In the bog, daily NEE ranged from 1.3 to -7.4 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in wet phases and from 0.7 to -5.2 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in dry phases. On average, daily NEE in bog was 3 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> more positive and significantly higher in dry than in wet phases, mainly as a consequence of higher R<sub>eco</sub>. In general, NEE in bog was higher during dry phases compared to fen, while there was no difference during wet phases.

Daily NEE in fen grassland developed from near zero or a small net CO<sub>2</sub> sink in the first wet cycles to a significant sink in later wet phases (-6.2 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> at incubation end), which were contrasted by small net CO<sub>2</sub> sources in the later dry phases. In the fen, daily NEE ranged from -0.3 to -8.9 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in wet phases and from 1.4 to -3.0 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in dry phases. On average, daily NEE in fen was 5 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> more positive and significantly higher in dry than in wet phases, mainly as a consequence of higher R<sub>eco</sub>.

### *Long cycles*

Daily R<sub>eco</sub> was low in both grasslands at incubation start (Fig. 4-7 top; 2.5 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in bog and 1.9 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in fen). In subsequent wet phases, daily R<sub>eco</sub> stayed low in fen grassland (~ 3 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup>) while it clearly increased in the bog grassland (maximum of 8 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup>). Daily R<sub>eco</sub> was significantly higher during dry periods and increased from one dry period to the next in bog and fen grassland (Fig. 4-7). In dry phases, the bog grassland had about 3 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> higher respiration rates (range from 13.2 to 17.4 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup>) than the fen (range from 9.9 to 14.2 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup>). This agrees with higher GPP (see below) and higher brown vegetation biomass in the bog grassland. On average, daily R<sub>eco</sub> was 9 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> higher in dry than in wet phases, this was equivalent to a respiration increase by factor three.

Daily GPP was lowest in both grasslands at incubation start as the vegetation was still growing. Later, daily GPP stayed at the same level of ~-7 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in the fen grassland (Fig. 4-7) independent of the water level position. In contrast, GPP in bog grassland was about twice as high as in fen grassland with values between -11.9 and -17.2 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> independent of the water level (wet phase 1 was not considered here as vegetation was still in growth; see Fig. 4-7: high variability in GPP data in wet1). This agrees with the much higher accumulation of brown and dead biomass in the bog vegetation.

Daily NEE remained a net sink in wet phases during the entire incubation and was significantly higher in bog grassland (range of -5.2 to -9.7 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup>) compared to the fen grassland (range of -3 to -5.4 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup>). Daily NEE was strongly influenced by increased respiration in dry phases. Under dry conditions, the fen grassland was a CO<sub>2</sub> source during the entire incubation period and its source strength increased from one dry period to the next (range from 1.9 to 7.5 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup>). The bog grassland was a CO<sub>2</sub> sink during the first two dry phases (-1.4 to -4.4 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup>) but then turned into a CO<sub>2</sub> source (with maximum emissions of 5.0 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> at incubation end). On average, daily NEE was 8 to 9 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> more positive in dry than in wet phases due to higher R<sub>eco</sub>.

### *Comparison between short and long cycles*

In fen grassland, daily R<sub>eco</sub> was in the same range in short and in long cycles during wet and dry phases. In bog grassland, however, R<sub>eco</sub> in dry phases was higher in the long than in short cycles while the wet phases were comparable. The changes from wet to dry conditions were comparable and resulted in a duplication of R<sub>eco</sub> in bog in short cycles and a triplication in the other treatments (fen in short cycles, bog and fen in long cycles).

In general, the bog grassland was significantly ( $p < 0.05$ ) more productive than the fen grassland – this was supported by GPP and biomass results. Wet and dry phases did not alter the capacity to fix  $\text{CO}_2$  both in bog and fen grassland. The bog grassland was significantly ( $p < 0.05$ ) more productive when the water table changed in long cycles while the fen grassland was more productive in short water table cycles.

Daily NEE in wet phases was a consistent net  $\text{CO}_2$  sink in short and long cycles with higher net  $\text{CO}_2$  uptake in the bog grassland in the long cycles. The  $\text{CO}_2$  sink strength increased at incubation start and was slowly reduced in the course of incubation.

During dry phases, the  $\text{CO}_2$  sink strength was significantly lower or mesocosms turned to a  $\text{CO}_2$  source due to higher ecosystem respiration. During dry phases, the fen grassland was a  $\text{CO}_2$  source in the long cycles regime, in short cycles it was a small sink at the start but turned to a small source in the course of the incubation.

The change from wet to dry conditions resulted in a more pronounced reduction of net  $\text{CO}_2$  uptake in long cycles (by 8 to 9  $\text{g C m}^{-2} \text{d}^{-1}$ ) than in short cycles (by 5  $\text{g C m}^{-2} \text{d}^{-1}$ ). In consequence, the grassland mesocosms turned to a net  $\text{CO}_2$  source in the first (fen) and third (bog) long cycle, and the sixth (fen) to eighth (bog) short cycle.

### 3.4. $\text{CH}_4$ and $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ emissions

#### *Short cycles*

Methane emissions were very low in wet and dry phases (Fig. 4-8) and were not significantly different between bog and fen grassland. Phase means ranged from -0.01 to 0.14  $\text{mg C m}^{-2} \text{h}^{-1}$ . Individual methane emissions above 0.2  $\text{mg C m}^{-2} \text{h}^{-1}$  were observed in six out of nine wet-dry cycles at the transition from wet to dry phases (data not shown) but returned to background levels during the first week of the dry phase.

$\text{N}_2\text{O}$  emissions were close to zero in the fen grassland irrespective of the water table position (Fig. 4-10). In bog grassland, small amounts of  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  were emitted during the first wet-dry phase (phase means of 1.1 (wet1) and 0.5 (dry1)  $\text{mg N m}^{-2} \text{h}^{-1}$ ) and were close to zero during the rest of the incubation.

#### *Long cycles*

Methane emissions were very low during the first two wet-dry phases in bog and fen grassland (Fig. 4-9) and slightly increased in the third wet-dry phase (means of 0.3  $\text{mg C m}^{-2} \text{h}^{-1}$  (bog) and 0.6  $\text{mg C m}^{-2} \text{h}^{-1}$  (fen) in wet phase 3). At incubation end, methane emissions decreased to the initial range in fen while they were on average  $\sim 0.6 \text{ mg C m}^{-2} \text{h}^{-1}$  in bog. In general,  $\text{CH}_4$  emissions were not different between bog and fen grassland. Individual observations reached occasionally 1 to 4  $\text{mg C m}^{-2} \text{h}^{-1}$  in fen grassland but never exceeded 1.5  $\text{mg C m}^{-2} \text{h}^{-1}$  in bog grassland.

$\text{N}_2\text{O}$  emissions were in general very low (Fig. 4-11). They were highest in bog grassland mesocosms in the first wet phase (mean of 0.4  $\text{mg N m}^{-2} \text{h}^{-1}$ ) and remained thereafter in the range of 0.1 to 0.3  $\text{mg N m}^{-2} \text{h}^{-1}$  irrespective of the water table position. In fen grassland,  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  was emitted in the range from 0.01 to 0.06 in both wet and dry phases without any visible trend.

### 3.5. GHG balance in CO<sub>2</sub> equivalents

The first wet-dry phase was not considered as the vegetation was still growing and, therefore, the GHG balance of wet-dry phase 1 was not comparable with subsequent wet-dry phases. The GHG balance was dominated by net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake as CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions were small throughout the incubation.

In short cycles, both grasslands were clear net GHG sinks during wet phases (mean of wet phases  $-19.9 \pm 4.8$  g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in bog and  $-23.1 \pm 7.4$  g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in fen; n=8). During dry phases, the bog was a clear GHG sink at incubation start ( $-18.4$  g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in the 2<sup>nd</sup> dry phase) and turned to a small GHG source at the end ( $2.9$  g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in the 8<sup>th</sup> dry phase) (mean of all dry phases  $-7.7 \pm 7.5$  g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup>). The fen switched from a GHG sink to a small GHG source at incubation end (mean of dry phases  $-1.7 \pm 5.5$  g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup>). The mean difference between wet and subsequent dry phase in short cycles was  $12.2 \pm 6.7$  g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> (bog) and  $21.5 \pm 9.3$  g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> (fen)(Fig. 4-12).

In long cycles, both grasslands were a considerable to moderate GHG sink during wet phases (mean of wet phases  $-27.1 \pm 8.2$  g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in bog and  $-15.7 \pm 4.8$  g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in fen; n=3) and turned to a moderate to large GHG source during dry phases (mean of dry phases  $10.2 \pm 11.8$  g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in bog and  $21.3 \pm 6.3$  g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in fen). The mean difference between wet and subsequent dry phase was much higher in long cycles ( $37.3 \pm 5.6$  g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in bog and  $37.0 \pm 7.1$  g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in fen; see Fig. 4-12) than in short cycles.

## 4. Discussion

### 4.1. Fast response of peat grasslands to water table fluctuations

#### *Vegetation response*

We worked with grass species not adapted to permanently flooded conditions. Nevertheless, the vegetation coped remarkably well with the strong water stress induced by extreme wet-dry cycles and extended phases of flooding (i.e. water level at +5 cm for 42 days (=long cycles)) in our experiments. In the bog grassland, the productivity was generally higher and the vegetation coped better with longer wet phases in the long cycles regime – the vegetation reacted with higher biomass production, a partial die-off and subsequent accumulation of brown leaves and dead matter (77% of total biomass at incubation end) but no decline in green biomass. In contrast, the vegetation in the fen grassland mesocosms reacted with slow growth but lower mortality (56% dead biomass at incubation end in long cycles regime). The fen grassland was more productive when wet phases were short.

However, in an earlier experiment (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014) under conditions of a gradually raised water table and subsequent flooding for 3 months, the vegetation of the same fen grassland reacted similarly to the bog vegetation in the present experiment: The „grasses“ (fen) had a high total biomass of  $2.0 \pm 0.5$  kg dw m<sup>-2</sup>) but with a high fraction of dead biomass (26% green, 58% brown, 16% other dead matter). Obviously, the vegetation can react in both patterns on the same site under different circumstances. The vegetation response pattern seems to be flexible and situation-specific rather than species-specific.

In both types of grassland, the died-off plant matter, which accumulated throughout the incubation, provided readily degradable and energy-rich substrates for microbial decomposition processes

under intermittent aerobic conditions.

*Response of photosynthesis, respiration, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes to a dynamic water table*

The capacity to fix CO<sub>2</sub> by photosynthesis (GPP) was not clearly affected by the dynamic change in water table in both grasslands, neither in the days after abrupt water table change nor gradually during the periods of stable water table. This is in agreement with (Leiber-Sauheitl et al. 2014) and (Lindroth et al. 2007) who showed that GPP was not affected by water level but by radiation.

Respiration reacted within days to the abrupt water table change and was two to three times higher under dry conditions. (Leiber-Sauheitl et al. 2014) found that R<sub>eco</sub> fluxes were strongly negatively correlated with the water level which agrees with our findings. However, the increase in respiration in our experiment was even higher than those measured by (Estop-Aragonés and Blodau 2012) – there peat respiration of fen peat cores under experimental drought increased by a factor between 1.4 and 2.1 higher.

A similarly fast R<sub>eco</sub> reaction within days was observed in a mesocosm study by (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014). We are not aware of any field observations immediately following strong water table fluctuations. The immediate R<sub>eco</sub> response to water table change is so far unaccounted for in standard gap-filling procedures of CO<sub>2</sub> flux measurements (Reichstein et al. 2005; Moffat et al. 2007) for gap-filling for eddy covariance net carbon fluxes and for interpolation of manual in-situ measurements to annual CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes (Leiber-Sauheitl et al. 2014) but may have a significant effect on the annual CO<sub>2</sub> balance in peatlands.

(Estop-Aragonés and Blodau 2012) showed that aerobic CO<sub>2</sub> production rates decreased with time after drying presumably due to substrate limitation. Therefore, it needs to be assessed if large initial respiration pulses after a change from anaerobic to aerobic conditions will persist over longer periods.

Net ecosystem exchange (NEE) was driven by the variation in ecosystem respiration. We argue that this is fully attributed to water table driven variation in heterotrophic soil respiration (R<sub>h</sub>) because our data showed that GPP was unaffected by water-table and the ratio of autotrophic respiration (R<sub>a</sub>) to GPP is reported to be relatively stable – with values between 0.44 and 0.53 independent of ecosystem type (Schulze et al. 2009). Applying the R<sub>a</sub>:GPP ratio of the literature to our data would, however, partly produce negative R<sub>h</sub>, which is biologically impossible. Using R<sub>h</sub> > 0 as constraint, we can derive a maximum possible R<sub>a</sub>:GPP ratio for the mesocosms. For the long cycles, the maximum possible R<sub>a</sub>:GPP ratio was 0.43 (bog) and 0.36 (fen). For the short cycles, the maximum possible R<sub>a</sub>:GPP ratio for the bog grassland was 0.44 but only 0.23 for the fen grassland. R<sub>a</sub>:GPP ratio for the bog grassland is close to the literature values while the fen grassland showed a lower ratio.

In dry phases, mean R<sub>h</sub> fluxes were raised by ~ 9 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> compared to wet phases in long cycles (bog and fen) and by 4.2 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> (bog) to 6.6 g C m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> (fen) in short cycles. The R<sub>h</sub> increases fully match the NEE differences, providing independent evidence that water table only affects heterotrophic respiration (R<sub>h</sub>). In wet phases, R<sub>h</sub>:R<sub>eco</sub> was 0.2 or lower, while in dry phases, R<sub>h</sub>:R<sub>eco</sub> ranged between 0.5 and 0.8. Given the consistent and reproducible response of R<sub>h</sub> to water table, we suggest that the water table dependent R<sub>h</sub>:R<sub>eco</sub> ratio can significantly improve gap-filling and interpolation of CO<sub>2</sub> measurements to calculate annual carbon balances in peatlands with dynamic water table.

CH<sub>4</sub> flux rates were low despite the large amount of dead biomass and warm conditions. With

regard to N<sub>2</sub>O emissions, no response to change in water table position was found.

#### *Response of net GHG balance to simulated rewetting*

A dynamic change in the water table from wet to dry conditions resulted in a reduction of net GHG uptake by 12.2 in bog and 21.5 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in fen when wet phases were relatively short (7 days in short cycles) – and both grasslands turned from moderate GHG sinks to small GHG sources at incubation end. With extended phases of flooding (42 days in long cycles), the shift of net GHG fluxes was much stronger (reduction by 37 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup>) – and both grasslands oscillated between strong net GHG sink and source mode.

In a previous experiment we tested a slow, stepwise rewetting. In contrast to the dynamic water table regime of this experiment, both R<sub>eco</sub> and GPP were reduced with raising water table. One cm water table raise increased the net GHG uptake by 0.8 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014) which is in a similar range as our long cycle regime (increase by 0.7 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> per cm water table raise). The rewetting under short cycles resulted in much lower increase of net GHG uptake (0.2 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in bog and 0.4 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in fen). Long-term flooding for three months, however, imposed a shock on the vegetation which reacted with reduced GPP, increased R<sub>eco</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emissions. Long-term flooding increased GHG emissions by 27 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> (in “grasses” = fen grassland, (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014) bringing net GHG emissions back to those observed at -30 cm water level.

## **4.2. The legacy of flooded periods**

*Is the response fully reversible when the water table switches back to the original position, and repeatable? Is there a memory effect of previous flooding or drainage events?*

The redox potential response to water table switches was fully reversible and repeatable (see Fig. 4-4 and Fig. 4-5). The temporal patterns and the magnitude of redox shifts were well reproduced in the nine (short) or four (long) wet-dry cycles so that there was no indication of legacy effects or pool depletion of redox substances. The oxidative status of the peat soils was recovered within one week of dry conditions – this process was very fast and reproducible.

Similarly, there was no indication of legacy effects regarding CH<sub>4</sub> fluxes. The production of CH<sub>4</sub> is strongly connected to anaerobic conditions in the peat – these were not reached during the 7 wet days in the short cycles regime but during 10 to 20 days of flooding in long cycles. Nevertheless, CH<sub>4</sub> emissions remained low despite the large amount of readily degradable organic matter. CH<sub>4</sub> production can be suppressed even at low concentrations of alternative electron acceptors such as iron and sulphate (Limpens et al. 2008) or methanogens need longer periods for activation. One week of drainage hence can effectively avoid CH<sub>4</sub> emissions in a fully reproducible manner.

Under wet conditions, both grasslands acted as consistent net CO<sub>2</sub> sinks. The change in water table from wet to dry conditions led to an explicit reduction of the net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake due to increased heterotrophic ecosystem respiration. This reduction in net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake was ~1.7 times higher when wet phases were long. We cannot rule out whether the longer phases had a stronger stimulating effect or whether the shorter phases were not yet in equilibrium. Both grasslands turned from CO<sub>2</sub> sink to net CO<sub>2</sub> source in the course of incubation – this shift to CO<sub>2</sub> source took place earlier in the fen (sixth (fen) to eighth (bog) cycle in the short cycles regime; first (fen) and third (bog) cycle in the long cycles regime). Obviously, the repetition of wet-dry cycles stimulated CO<sub>2</sub> sources.

Respiration rates ( $R_{\text{eco}}$ ) and net GHG emissions increased from one dry phase to the next (App-Fig. 4-1). We assume that this could be a substrate mobilization effect. This effect is known for DOC release in the water table fluctuation zone, and could also be due to the decomposition of the dead biomass which accumulated in the course of the experiment and was decomposed under aerobic conditions. The stimulation by past wet-dry cycles, however, is small compared to the immediate effects of switching from wet to dry conditions so that for  $\text{CO}_2$ , we only found a small legacy effect of past flooding.

### 4.3. Alternating water tables as low-GHG management strategies

*How long do interim dry periods need to be to effectively reduce  $\text{CH}_4$  emissions?*

Lowering the water table leads to a renewal of the electron acceptor capacity in peat soils because aeration causes a re-oxidation of reduced compounds (e.g. sulfides, ferric iron, nitrate) which constrain methanogenesis (Knorr and Blodau 2009; Knorr et al. 2009). When rewetted, these electron acceptors in the peat are consumed and methanogenic conditions establish.

In our experiment, the redox potential reacted within the first week after water table switches. Conditions favourable for methanogenesis (redox potential  $< -150$  mV) in the topsoil were only just reached after 10 to 20 days of wet conditions (see Fig. 4-5 for long cycles regime) and never occurred during the short cycles regime. Consequently,  $\text{CH}_4$  flux rates were low despite the large amount of dead biomass and warm conditions. This shows that the risk for high  $\text{CH}_4$  emissions during intermittent flooding is low, when enough redox equivalents are present in the top soil. One week of dry conditions fully recovered the oxidative status in the peat soils – this process was very fast and very reproducible (Fig. 4-4 and Fig. 4-5). We suggest that one week of low water table could work as a general rule of thumb for  $\text{CH}_4$  avoidance.

The regeneration of the electron acceptor pool under experimental drought and subsequent inhibited methanogenesis after rewetting was confirmed in peat mesocosms (Knorr and Blodau 2009; Estop-Aragónés and Blodau 2012) and in the field (Knorr et al. 2009). The suppressive effect on methanogenesis after drought lasted 1 to 4 weeks after rewetting of a fen site in Southern Germany (Knorr et al. 2009). In peat mesocosms, methanogenesis was temporarily suppressed for 20 to 50 days after rewetting (Knorr and Blodau 2009). Elevated methane concentrations occur only after complete depletion of electron acceptors, although methanogenic activity recovers locally quickly from aeration and, consequently, more frequent droughts are suggested as means to prevent the establishment of methanogenic conditions for longer periods of time (Knorr and Blodau 2009).

Under long-term flooding, conditions in the peat become favourable for methanogenesis resulting in increasing  $\text{CH}_4$  emissions (estimated maximum  $16.1 \text{ mg C m}^{-2} \text{ h}^{-1}$  for the fen grassland (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014).

*Do wet-dry cycles foster  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  emissions?*

Unexpectedly, we detected no risk of high  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  emissions – neither when the water table changed dynamically nor when it was raised in steps (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014). This findings contrast with  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  peaks in rewetting events in mineral soils and groundwater-dependent  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  peaks in agricultural organic soils (Flessa et al. 1998). We assume that the peat soils were not yet dry enough after 1 to 2 weeks at a low water table (-45 cm) to produce  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  instead of  $\text{N}_2$  by denitrification. Both grassland sites have been used for agriculture for a long time and are in highly fertile

conditions. The low N<sub>2</sub>O emissions may be due to substrate limitation caused by vegetation growth. Mean values of 1.1 NH<sub>4</sub>-N mg l<sup>-1</sup> (maximum 4.9 NH<sub>4</sub>-N mg l<sup>-1</sup>) in bog and of 0.4 NH<sub>4</sub>-N mg l<sup>-1</sup> (maximum 1.5 NH<sub>4</sub>-N mg l<sup>-1</sup>) in fen were indeed low. Ammonium rather than nitrate was the dominant mineral nitrogen form in the soils and the aerobic process of nitrification is inhibited in wet conditions. Low N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes were also observed in field measurements on the same sites (Drösler et al. 2011).

#### *Alternating water table as low-GHG management strategy in peat grasslands*

Alternating flooding and drainage could be used to achieve low GHG emissions in peat grasslands. Some thoughts should be given to the length of the alternating wet-dry phases with respect to site-specific risks of N<sub>2</sub>O and the adaptiveness of vegetation to wet conditions as each water table has its drawbacks.

Under permanent waterlogged conditions, conditions in become favourable for methanogenesis and there is a risk of high CH<sub>4</sub> emissions when readily degradable organic matter is present (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2011). Intermittent dry periods, however, will restore the oxidative status in the peat soil and prevent high CH<sub>4</sub> emissions. But intermittent dry phases should be kept as short as possible to keep CO<sub>2</sub> release from aerobic respiration low as respiration was shown to be 2 to 3-fold higher under drained conditions. One week of dry conditions is considered as long enough to balance between CH<sub>4</sub> avoidance and increased CO<sub>2</sub> release.

The water table should be kept at a level which allows the vegetation not only to survive but to thrive – this would lead to higher net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake. When dying-off, the vegetation provides readily degradable organic matter for microbial decomposition which results in a risk for high CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emissions (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2011; Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014). In our experiment, the change from wet to dry conditions led to additional GHG emissions of 12 to 21 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> when wet phases were relatively short (short cycles) and 37 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equ. m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> when wet phases were long (long cycles) and a large amount of dead organic matter accumulated in the flooded periods. But permanent flooding (+5 cm) also reduced the GHG sink strength and – as the flooding lasted for more than six weeks – turned the fen grassland into a GHG source (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014).

Our incubation experiment showed that even if the peatland is flooded for a few weeks in spring or summer, mean CH<sub>4</sub> emissions were 25 times lower than the still low values observed after 3 months of flooding (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2014) and much below the high reported literature values from eutrophic shallow lakes (Hahn-Schöfl et al. 2011).

## **5. Conclusions**

We conducted mesocosm experiments with highly productive grasslands on contrasting peat soils simulating extreme wet-dry cycles. We tested the adaptive capacity of the vegetation to flooding stress, the short-term response times of CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O to alternating water tables and the memory effect of previous stress. Surprisingly, GPP remained relatively unaffected by strong water table oscillations and phases of flooding. Obviously, even grass species considered unsuitable for wet conditions have effective adaptation mechanisms as long as wetness stress does not persist for more than a few weeks.

Peat grasslands were a GHG sink under wet conditions (+5 cm). Draining (-45 cm) strongly reduced the GHG sink strength and turned the grasslands into a GHG source, driven by heterotrophic soil respiration and peat decomposition.

The observed short-term responses of GHG fluxes to water table changes agree with annual mean patterns (Couwenberg et al. 2008; Drösler et al. 2011). Heterotrophic soil respiration switched in less than a few days from a considerable CO<sub>2</sub> source in drained soil to near-zero CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes during flooding and vice versa. The slow response of redox potentials delays CH<sub>4</sub> emissions by weeks. Drainage and rewetting responses were fully reproducible over several wet-dry cycles so that one week of dry conditions is long enough to reset the soil conditions with minimal memory effects of previous water table conditions.

#### *Recommendations for low-GHG peatland management*

- In situations where drainage is practiced, avoid deeply drained conditions to avoid CO<sub>2</sub> loss by heterotrophic respiration, which immediately occurs when the soil is drained. Every wet day saves soil carbon, in particular during the vegetation period when biological activity is high.
- In situations where rewetting has led to extended flooding during the vegetation period with a risk of high CH<sub>4</sub> emissions, allow intermittent dry periods of one week to keep CH<sub>4</sub> emissions low. The oxidative status in the peat soil can be restored rapidly with a low water table which prevents high CH<sub>4</sub> emissions for weeks.
- Keep the vegetation vital, which results in higher net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake, and avoid the accumulation of fresh organic matter e.g. from dying-off vegetation, which bears the risk of higher CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> release under both aerobic and anaerobic conditions.
- Check soil properties for risks of high N<sub>2</sub>O emissions which may be important due to the high global warming potential. Alternating wet-dry phases did not foster N<sub>2</sub>O emissions in our experiments.

## **Acknowledgements**

We thank the staff of the Max Planck Institute for Biogeochemistry for their excellent technical assistance in the experimental set-up and their support in gas and peat analysis. CH<sub>4</sub> gas analyses were performed at the Thünen Institute. We are grateful to a number of students for performing gas flux measurements in the climate chamber. Matthias Drösler (HSWT, Freising) and Heinrich Höper (LBEG, Hannover) allowed the sampling of peat mesocosms and provided information of the sampling sites. Funding for this research was provided by the Federal Ministry of Education and Research (BMBF) through the integrative project “*Climate mitigation via peatland management*” (FKZ 01LS05051) and the Thünen Institute.

## References

- Augustin J (2001) Emission, Aufnahme und Klimarelevanz von Spurengasen. In: Succow M, Joosten H (eds) *Landschaftsökologische Moorkunde*, 2. Auflage. Schweitzerbart'sche Verlagsbuchhandlung, pp 28–37
- Beetz S, Liebersbach H, Glatzel S, et al. (2013) Effects of land use intensity on the full greenhouse gas balance in an Atlantic peat bog. *Biogeosciences* 10:1067–1082. doi: 10.5194/bg-10-1067-2013
- Calmano W (2010) Bestimmung des Redoxpotentials. *Praktikum Umweltchemie der Technischen Universität Hamburg-Harburg*. Institut für Umwelttechnik und Energiewirtschaft. Hamburg
- Couwenberg J, Augustin J, Michaelis D, et al. (2008) Entwicklung von Grundsätzen für eine Bewertung von Niedermooren hinsichtlich ihrer Klimarelevanz. Studie im Auftrag des Ministerium für Landwirtschaft und Naturschutz Mecklenburg-Vorpommern. Greifswald University
- Dalal RC, Allen DE (2008) Greenhouse gas fluxes from natural ecosystems. *Australian Journal of Botany* 56:369–407.
- Drösler M (2005) Trace gas exchange and climatic relevance of bog ecosystems, Southern Germany. Dissertation pp 182.
- Drösler M, Adelman W, Augustin J, et al. (2011) Klimaschutz durch Moorschutz - Schlussbericht des Vorhabens „Klimaschutz - Moornutzungsstrategien“ - “Climate mitigation via peatland management”, 2006-2010.
- Drösler M, Freibauer A, Christensen TR, Friborg T (2008) Observations and status of peatland greenhouse gas emissions in Europe. In: Dolman AJ, Valentini R, Freibauer A (eds) *The continental-scale greenhouse gas balance of Europe*. Springer Verlag, pp 243–262
- Estop-Aragonés C, Blodau C (2012) Effects of experimental drying intensity and duration on respiration and methane production recovery in fen peat incubations. *Soil Biology and Biochemistry* 47:1–9. doi: 10.1016/j.soilbio.2011.12.008
- Fiedler S (1999) In situ long-term-measurements of redox potential in redoximorphic soils. In: Schüring J, Schulz HD, Fischer WR, et al. (eds) *Redox: Fundamentals, Processes and Applications*. Springer Verlag, pp 81–94
- Fiedler S, Vepraskas MJ, Richardson JL (2007) Soil Redox Potential: Importance, Field Measurements, and Observations. *Advances in Agronomy* 94:1–54. doi: 10.1016/S0065-2113(06)94001-2
- Flessa H, Wild U, Klemisch M, Pfadenhauer J (1998) Nitrous oxide and methane fluxes from organic soils under agriculture. *European Journal of Soil Science* 49:327–335.
- Frank S, Tiemeyer B, Gelbrecht J, Freibauer A (2014) High soil solution carbon and nitrogen concentrations in a drained Atlantic bog are reduced to natural levels by 10 years of rewetting.

Biogeosciences 11:2309–2324. doi: doi:10.5194/bg-11-2309-2014

- Hahn-Schöfl M, Thuille A, Schöfl G, Freibauer A (2014) Experimental rewetting of peat grasslands: critical water table thresholds for greenhouse gas emissions and vegetation responses. in preparation
- Hahn-Schöfl M, Zak D, Minke M, et al. (2011) Organic sediment formed during inundation of a degraded fen grassland emits large fluxes of CH<sub>4</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub>. *Biogeosciences* 8:1539–1550. doi: 10.5194/bg-8-1539-2011
- Höper H (2007) Freisetzung von Treibhausgasen aus deutschen Mooren. *TELMA - Berichte der Deutschen Gesellschaft für Moor- und Torfkunde* Band 37:85–116.
- Höper H, Augustin J, Cagampan J, et al. (2008) Restoration of peatlands and greenhouse gas balances. In: Strack M (ed) *Peatlands and Climate Change*. International Peat Society, Jyväskylä, pp 182–210
- IPCC (2007) IPCC Fourth Assessment Report (AR4), Working Group 1, Chapter 2, Changes in Atmospheric Constituents and in Radiative Forcing.
- Joosten H (2010) *The Global Peatland CO<sub>2</sub> Picture: Peatland status and drainage related emissions in all countries of the world*. Wetlands International.
- Joosten H, Couwenberg J (2001) *Bilanzen zum Moorerlust: Das Beispiel Europa. Landschaftsökologische Moorkunde, 2. Auflage*. Schweitzerbart'sche Verlagsbuchhandlung, pp 406–408
- Joosten H, Couwenberg J (2009) Are emission reductions from peatlands measurable, reportable and verifiable? Report for the UN-FCCC meetings in Bonn, June 2009. Wetlands International. Greifswald University
- Kasimir-Klmedtsson Å, Klmedtsson L, Berglund K, et al. (1997) Greenhouse gas emissions from farmed organic soils: a review. *Soil Use and Management* 13:245–250. doi: 10.1111/j.1475-2743.1997.tb00595.x
- Knorr K-H, Blodau C (2009) Impact of experimental drought and rewetting on redox transformations and methanogenesis in mesocosms of a northern fen soil. *Soil Biology and Biochemistry* 41:1187–1198. doi: 10.1016/j.soilbio.2009.02.030
- Knorr K-H, Lischeid G, Blodau C (2009) Dynamics of redox processes in a minerotrophic fen exposed to a water table manipulation. *Geoderma* 153:379–392. doi: 10.1016/j.geoderma.2009.08.023
- Leiber-Sauheitl K, Fuß R, Voigt C, Freibauer A (2014) High CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes from grassland on histic Gleysol along soil carbon and drainage gradients. *Biogeosciences* 11:749–761. doi: 10.5194/bg-11-749-2014
- Limpens J, Berendse F, Blodau C, et al. (2008) Peatlands and the carbon cycle: from local processes to global implications – a synthesis. *Biogeosciences* 5:1475–1491.
- Lindroth A, Lund M, Nilsson M, et al. (2007) Environmental controls on the CO<sub>2</sub> exchange in

- north European mires. *Tellus B* 59:812–825.
- Lloyd J, Taylor JA (1994) On the temperature dependence of soil respiration. *Functional Ecology* 8:315–323.
- Michaelis L, Menten ML (1913) Die Kinetik der Invertinwirkung. *Biochemische Zeitschrift* 49:333–369.
- Moffat AM, Papale D, Reichstein M, et al. (2007) Comprehensive comparison of gap-filling techniques for eddy covariance net carbon fluxes. *Agricultural and Forest Meteorology* 147:209–232. doi: 10.1016/j.agrformet.2007.08.011
- Pansu M, Gautheyrou J (2006) Redox potential. *Handbook of soil analysis: mineralogical, organic and inorganic methods*. Springer Verlag, Berlin, pp 581–591
- R Core Team (2013) R: A Language and Environment for Statistical Computing. R Foundation for Statistical Computing, Vienna, Austria. URL <http://www.R-project.org/>.
- Reichstein M, Falge E, Baldocchi D, et al. (2005) On the separation of net ecosystem exchange into assimilation and ecosystem respiration: review and improved algorithm. *Global Change Biology* 11:1424–1439. doi: 10.1111/j.1365-2486.2005.001002.x
- Schulze ED, Luysaert S, Ciais P, et al. (2009) Importance of methane and nitrous oxide for Europe's terrestrial greenhouse-gas balance. *Nature Geoscience* 2:842–850. doi: 10.1038/ngeo686
- Schüring J, Schulz HD, Fischer WR, et al. (1999) *Redox: Fundamentals, Processes and Applications*. Springer-Verlag Berlin Heidelberg New York
- Siopongco JDLC, Wassmann R, Sander BO (2013) Alternate wetting and drying in Philippine rice production: feasibility study for a clean development mechanism. *International Rice Research Institute, IRRI Technical Bulletin No 17* pp 14.
- UN-FAO (2010) *Climate-smart agriculture policies: practices and financing for food security, adaptation and mitigation*. Report by the Food and Agriculture Organization of the United Nations. Rome, Italy
- Upreti DC, Dhar S, Hongmin D, et al. (2012) *Technologies for climate change mitigation-Agriculture sector*. TNA Guidebook by the UNEP Risø Centre on Energy, Climate and Sustainable Development, Denmark. Department of Management Engineering, Technical University of Denmark, Roskilde, Denmark
- Warren MW, Kauffman JB, Murdiyarso D, et al. (2012) A cost-efficient method to assess carbon stocks in tropical peat soil. *Biogeosciences* 9:4477–4485. doi: 10.5194/bg-9-4477-2012
- WRB IUSS Working Group (2006) *World reference base for soil resources 2006*. World Soil Resources Reports No 103. FAO, Rome

## Tables and Figures

Tab. 4-1: Characterization of the sampling sites in the Ahlen-Falkenberger Moor and Freisinger Moos: dominant vegetation, management and soil characteristics\*

	Bog grassland	Fen grassland
Name of site in other literature**	Intensively managed grassland (TG1-A1; Ahlen-Falkenberger Moor)	Intensively managed grassland (TG5-F8, TG5-F9; Freisinger Moos)
Dominant vegetation	mainly <i>Anthoxanthum odoratum</i> and <i>Lolium perenne</i> with few <i>Taraxacum officinale</i> , <i>Cardamine pratensis</i> and some mosses	mainly <i>Festuca pratensis</i> , <i>Poa trivialis</i> , <i>Alopecurus pratensis</i> and <i>Dactylis glomerata</i>
Management	4-5 cuts per year, fertilization***	Middle intensity management: 2-3 cuts per year, low water table, fertilization##
	C export: no data available	C export: 470 (2007) and 192 (2008) g C m <sup>-2</sup> yr <sup>-1</sup>
	C import (manure): 226 (2008) and 206 (2009) g C m <sup>-2</sup> yr <sup>-1</sup>	C import: 135 (2007 and 2008) g C m <sup>-2</sup> yr <sup>-1</sup>
	mineral fertilization: 11.8 (2008) and 12.1 (2009) g N m <sup>-2</sup> yr <sup>-1</sup>	
Mean water table at the site**	< -60 cm	< -60 cm
Soil type	Ombric Fibric Histosol (Drainic)###	Sapric Histosol
Bulk density [g cm <sup>-3</sup> ]*	0.17 ± 0.03 <sup>a</sup>	0.43 ± 0.03 <sup>b</sup>
Ash content [%]*+	6.5 ± 1.4 <sup>a</sup>	49.4 ± 4.7 <sup>b</sup>
Carbon density		
[kg C m <sup>-3</sup> ]*#	86.2 ± 15.6 <sup>a</sup>	208.6 ± 12.7 <sup>b</sup>
Pore volume [%]*	83.8 ± 8.1 <sup>a</sup>	77.1 ± 1.2 <sup>a</sup>
pH*	3.8 ± 0.4 <sup>a</sup>	6.1 ± 0.2 <sup>ab</sup>

\* soil characteristics determined from mesocosms at incubation end (mean ± SD, n = 6; different letters indicate significant differences, p<0.05, Wilcoxon test)

\*\* (Drösler et al. 2011)

\*\*\* information from (Beetz et al. 2013)

# belowground carbon estimated based on bulk density (Warren et al. 2012)

## personal communication with Mathias Drösler

### information from (Frank et al. 2014) using WRB classification (WRB IUSS Working Group 2006)

+ determined by loss on ignition at 550°C

Fig. 4-1: Biogeochemical processes in dry and wet peat mesocosms as represented by the two water table levels

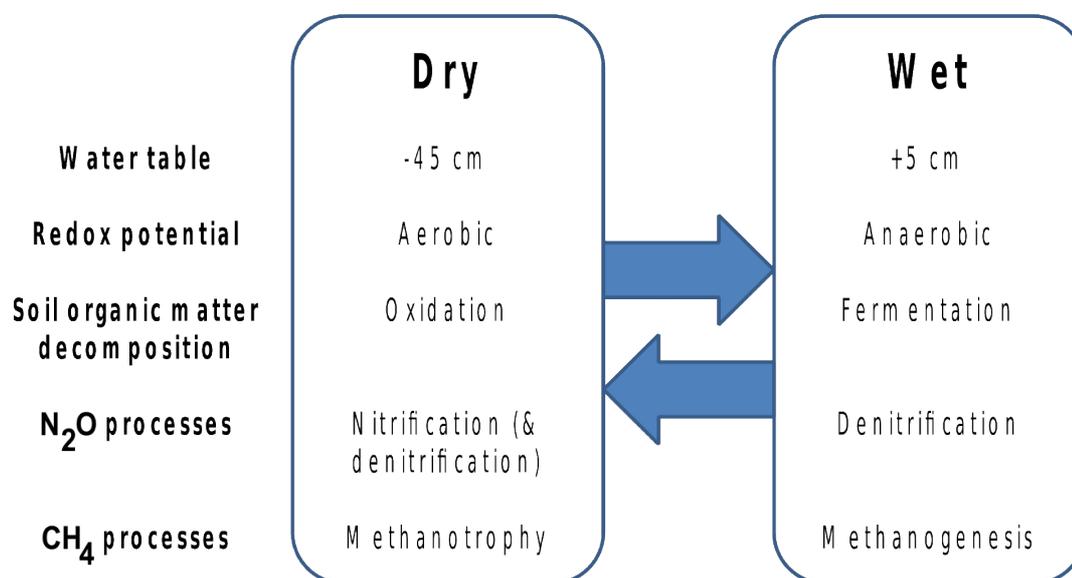


Fig. 4-2: Set-up of mesocosm and attached measurement chamber for gas exchange measurements:

a) PVC tube containing undisturbed peat core with vegetation (mesocosm), b) insulation and c) cooling system, d) redox probes with e) Ag/AgCl reference electrode, and f) soil temperature probes, g) water supply with sensor-controlled pump for water table manipulation, h) inundation tank as basin for supernatant water during flooding and as attachment for i) measurement chamber.

The transparent / opaque measurement chamber was equipped with j) two vents, k) a radiation-protected temperature sensor, l) a PAR sensor, and m) cooling packs for temperature control. Gas sampling was done via n) two ports (flow-through to a CO<sub>2</sub> infra-red gas analyser) or via o) a septum (manual sampling for CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O analysis).

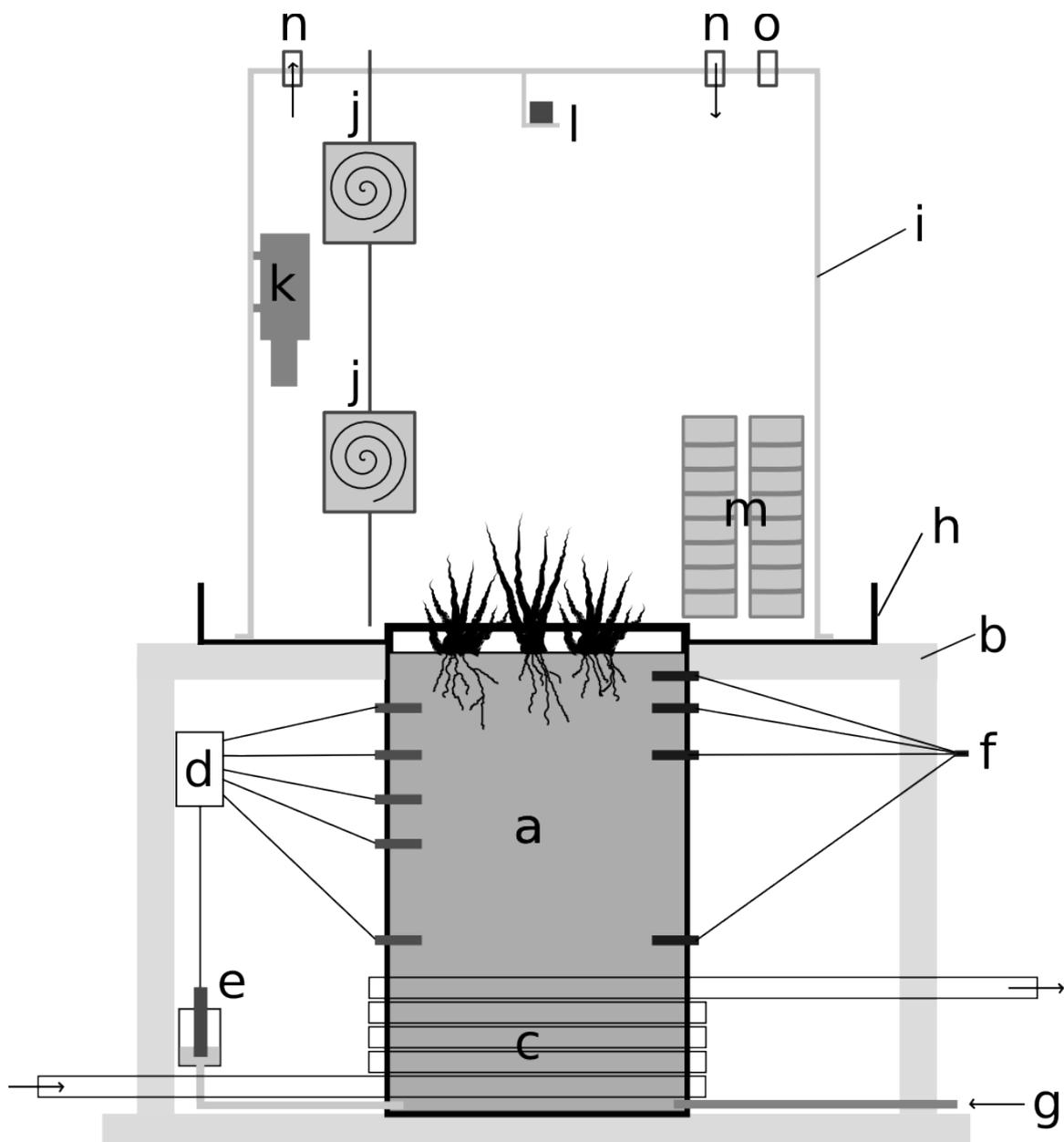


Fig. 4-3: Mean biomass in bog and fen grassland mesocosms at incubation end (separated in fraction green leaves, brown leaves, algae present in the inundation tank and other dead matter (such as dead roots and shoots, etc.);  $n=3$ ). The water table changed in short (left) and long cycles (right).

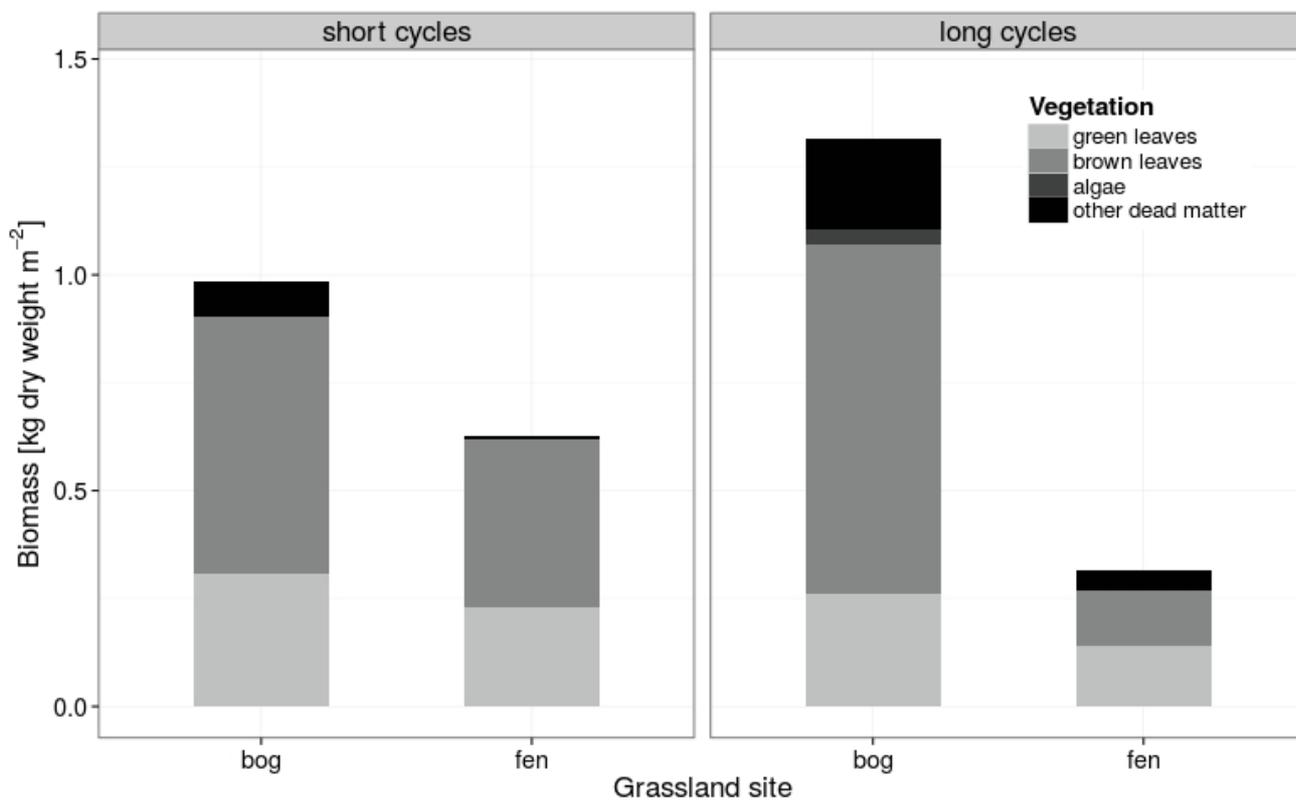


Fig. 4-4: Redox potential over the course of the experiment with changing water table in bog (top) and fen (bottom) grasslands measured in -5, -10 and -20 cm depth (daily mean of 3 replicates, n=864). The dotted line indicates the threshold for methanogenesis.

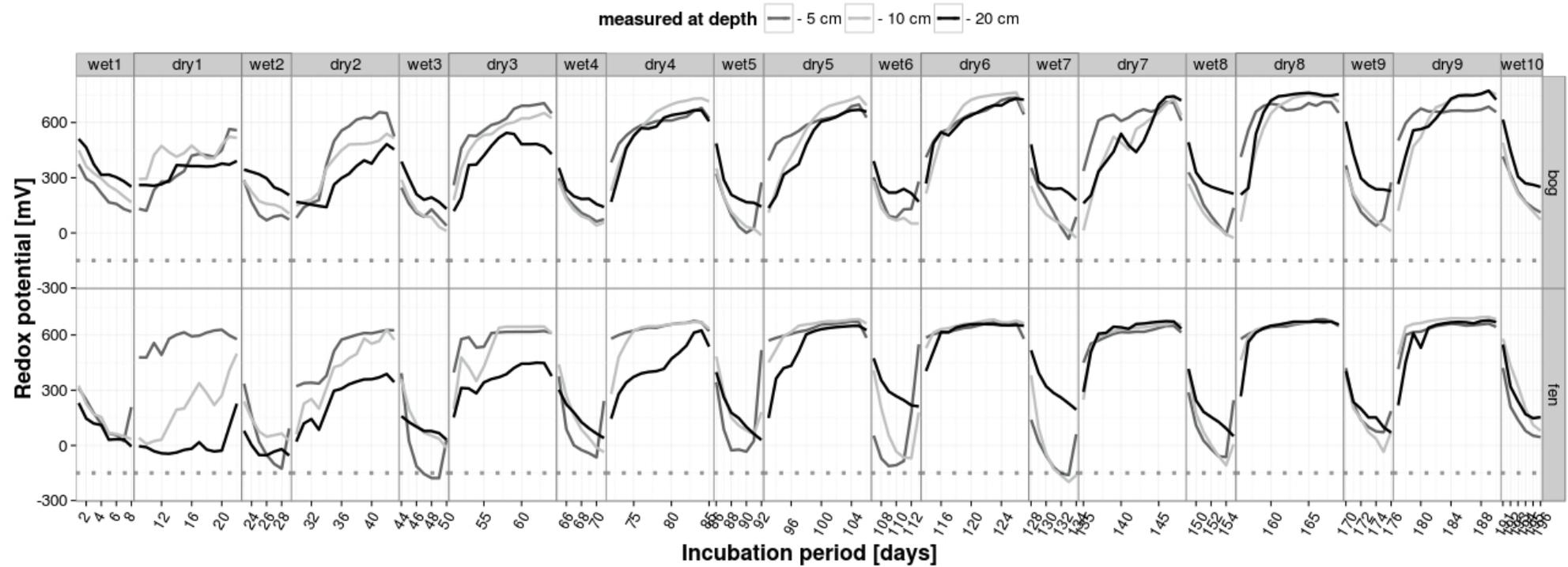


Fig. 4-5: Redox potential over the course of the experiment with changing water table in long cycles in bog (top) and fen (bottom) grasslands measured in -5, -10 and -20 cm depth (daily mean of 3 replicates, n=864). The dotted line indicates the threshold for methanogenesis.

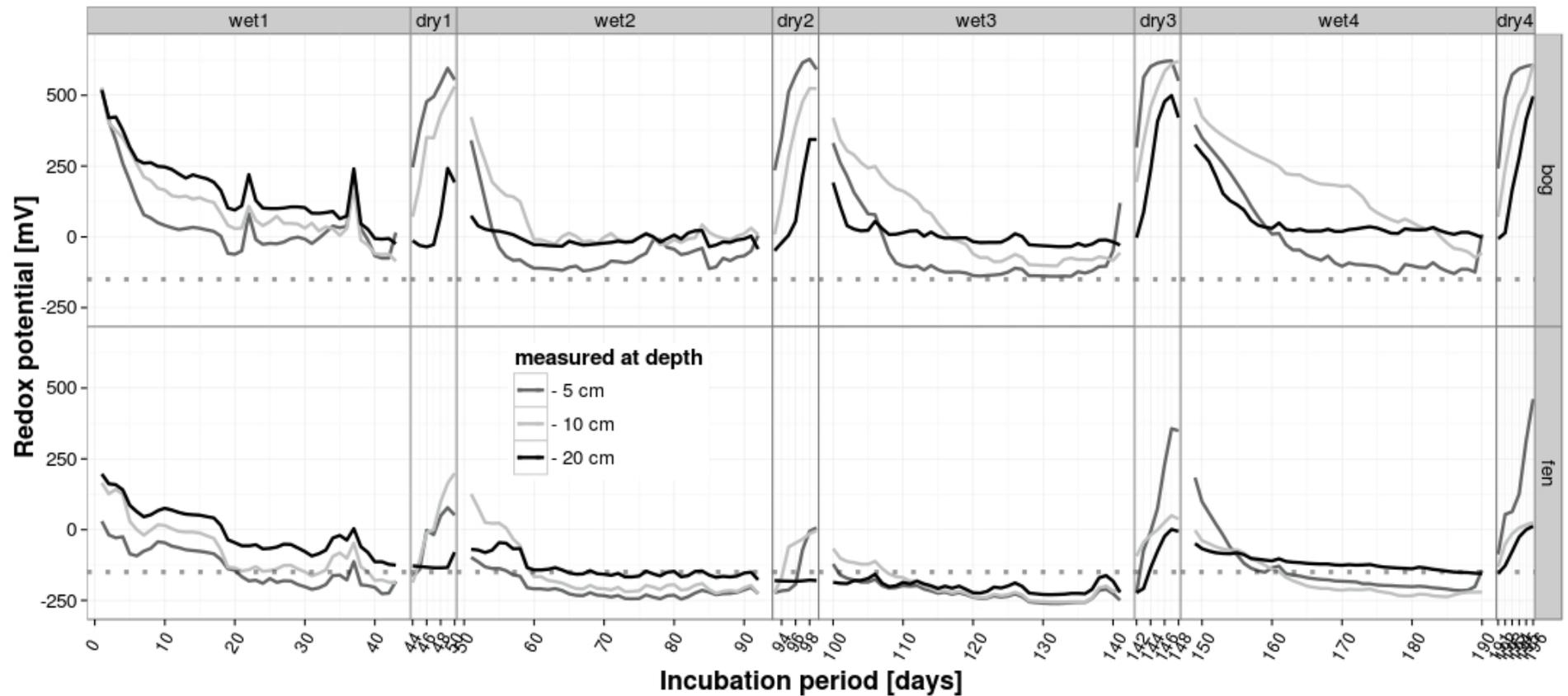


Fig. 4-6: Daily  $R_{eco}$  (top), GPP (centre) and NEE (bottom) in bog (black) and fen (grey) grassland mesocosms at dynamic water table in short cycles (modelling is based on fitting measurements to functions of (Lloyd & Taylor, 1994) and (Michaelis & Menten, 1913); crossbar shows mean  $\pm$  standard deviation,  $n=1$  to 4)

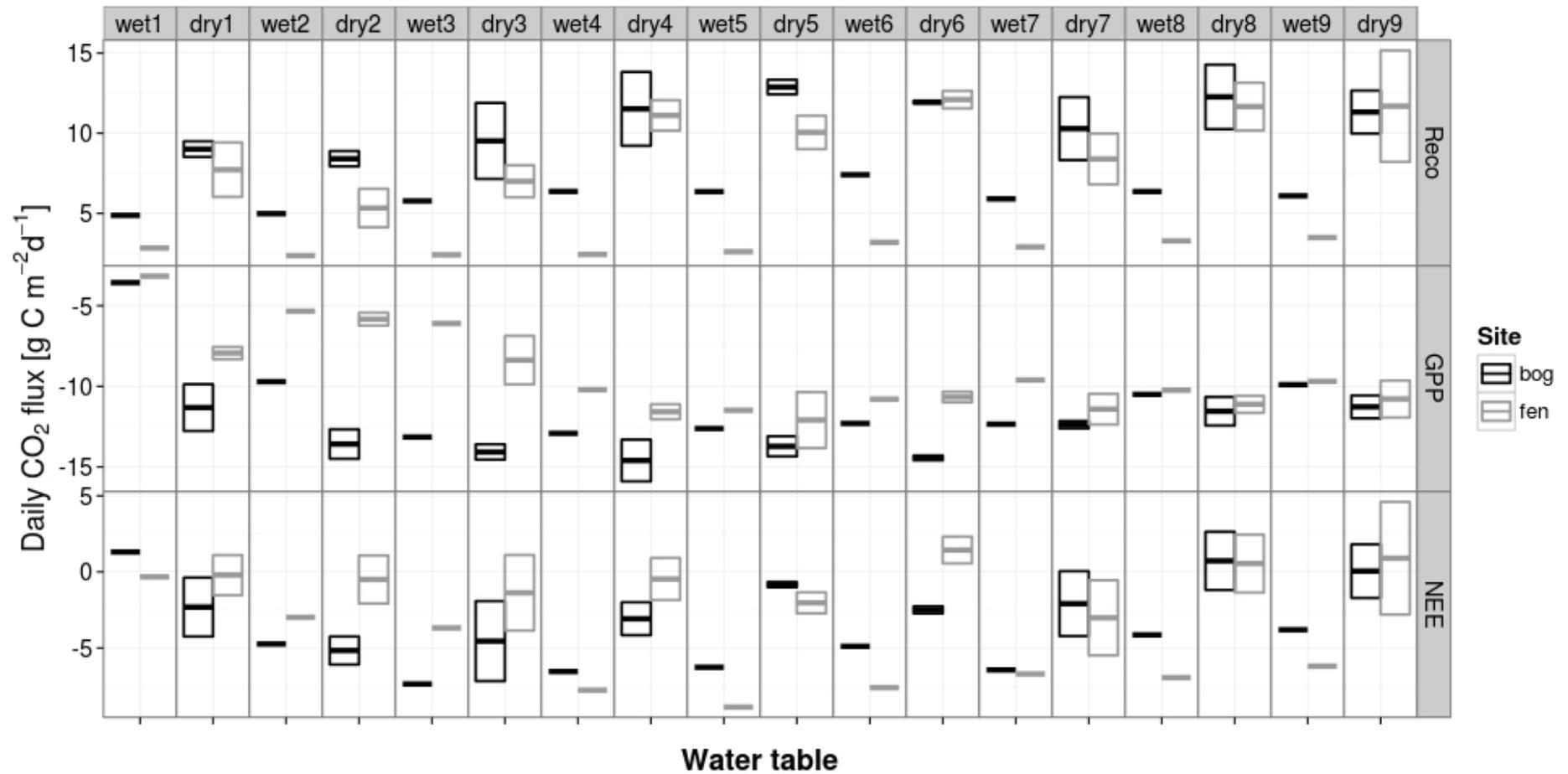


Fig. 4-7: Daily  $R_{eco}$  (top), GPP (centre) and NEE (bottom) in bog (black) and fen (grey) grassland mesocosms at dynamic water table in long cycles (modelling is based on fitting measurements to functions of (Lloyd & Taylor, 1994) and (Michaelis & Menten, 1913); crossbar shows mean  $\pm$  standard deviation,  $n= 1$  to 7)

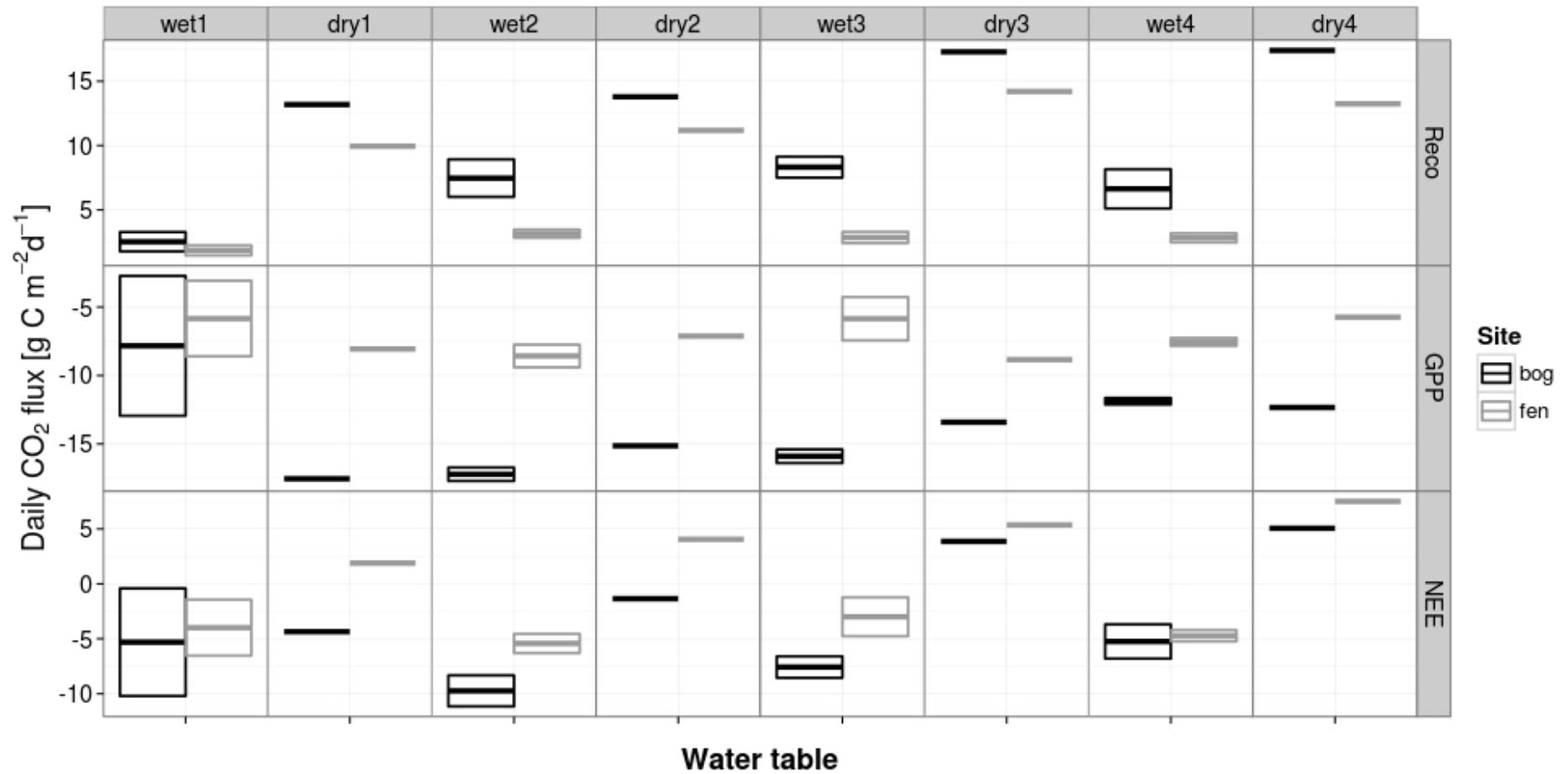


Fig. 4-8: Mean CH<sub>4</sub> flux in bog (black) and fen (grey) grassland mesocosms at dynamic water table in short cycles (mean  $\pm$  sd, n=6 to 18).

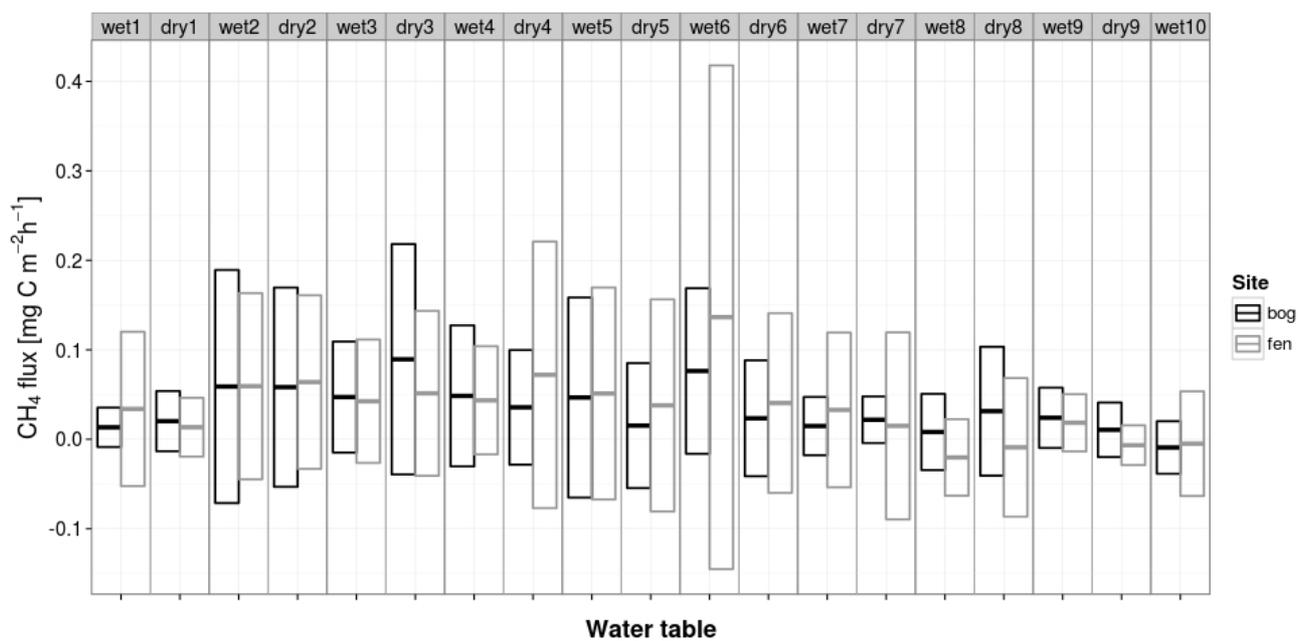


Fig. 4-9: Mean CH<sub>4</sub> flux in bog (black) and fen (grey) grassland mesocosms at dynamic water table in long cycles (mean ± sd, n=7 to 48).

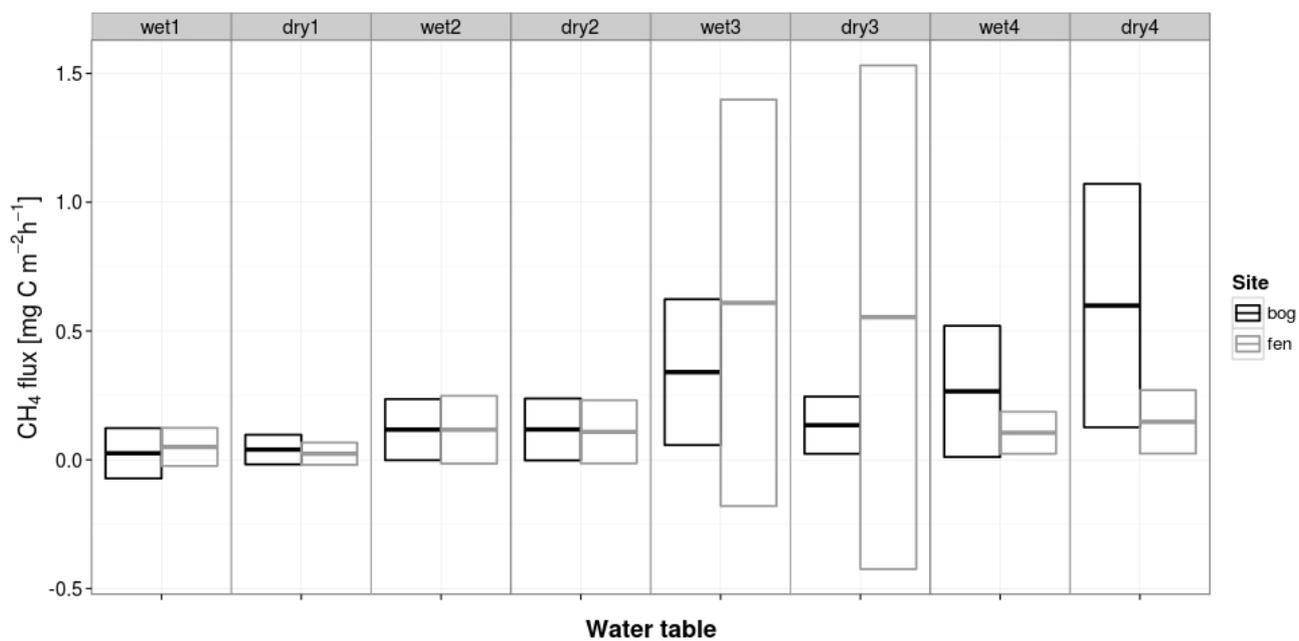


Fig. 4-10: Mean N<sub>2</sub>O flux in bog (black) and fen (grey) grassland mesocosms at dynamic water table in short cycles (mean  $\pm$  sd, n=6 to 18).

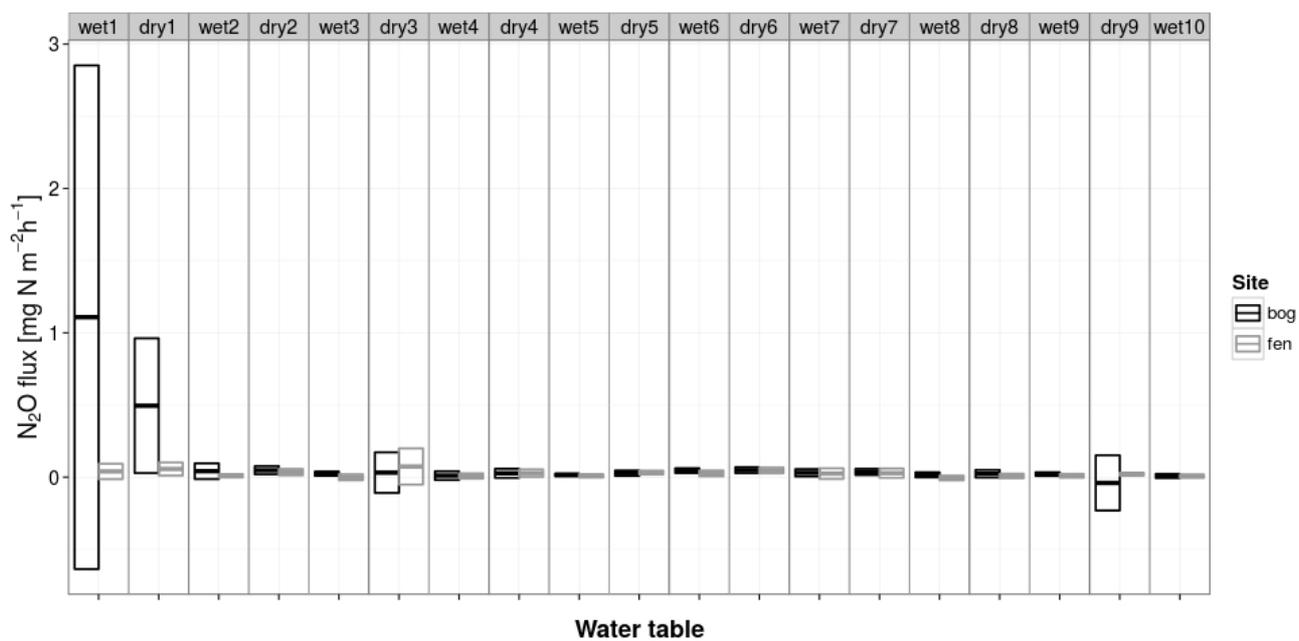


Fig. 4-11: Mean N<sub>2</sub>O flux in bog (black) and fen (grey) grassland mesocosms at dynamic water table in long cycles (mean  $\pm$  sd, n=7 to 48).

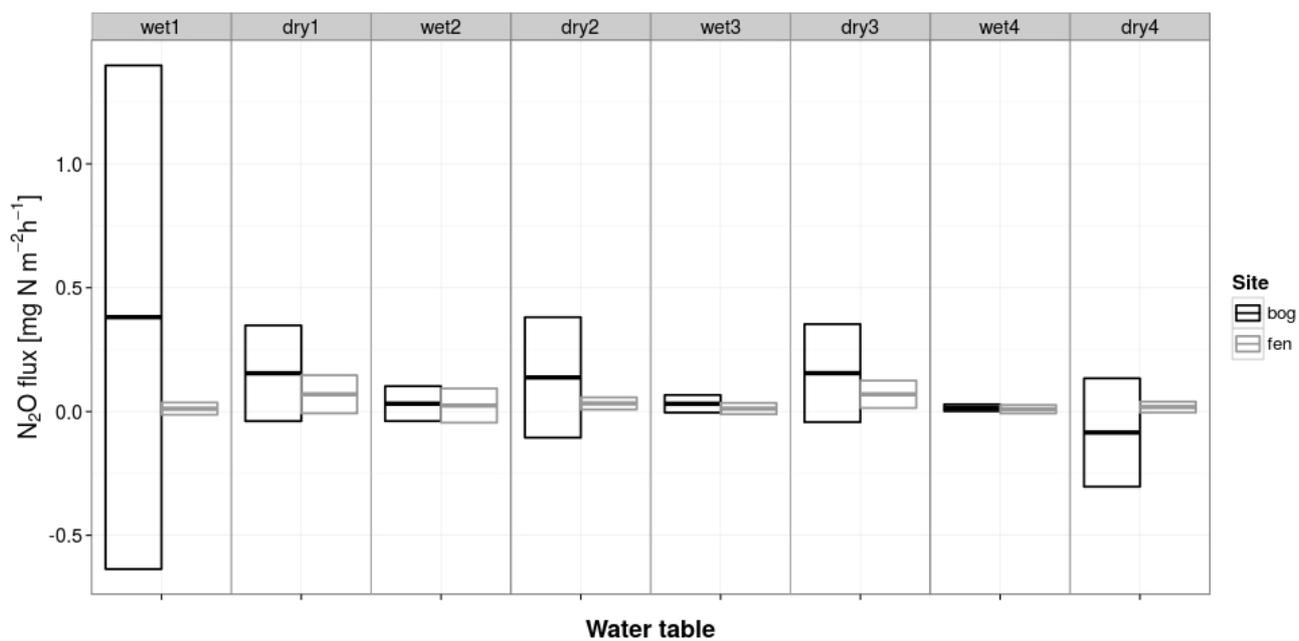
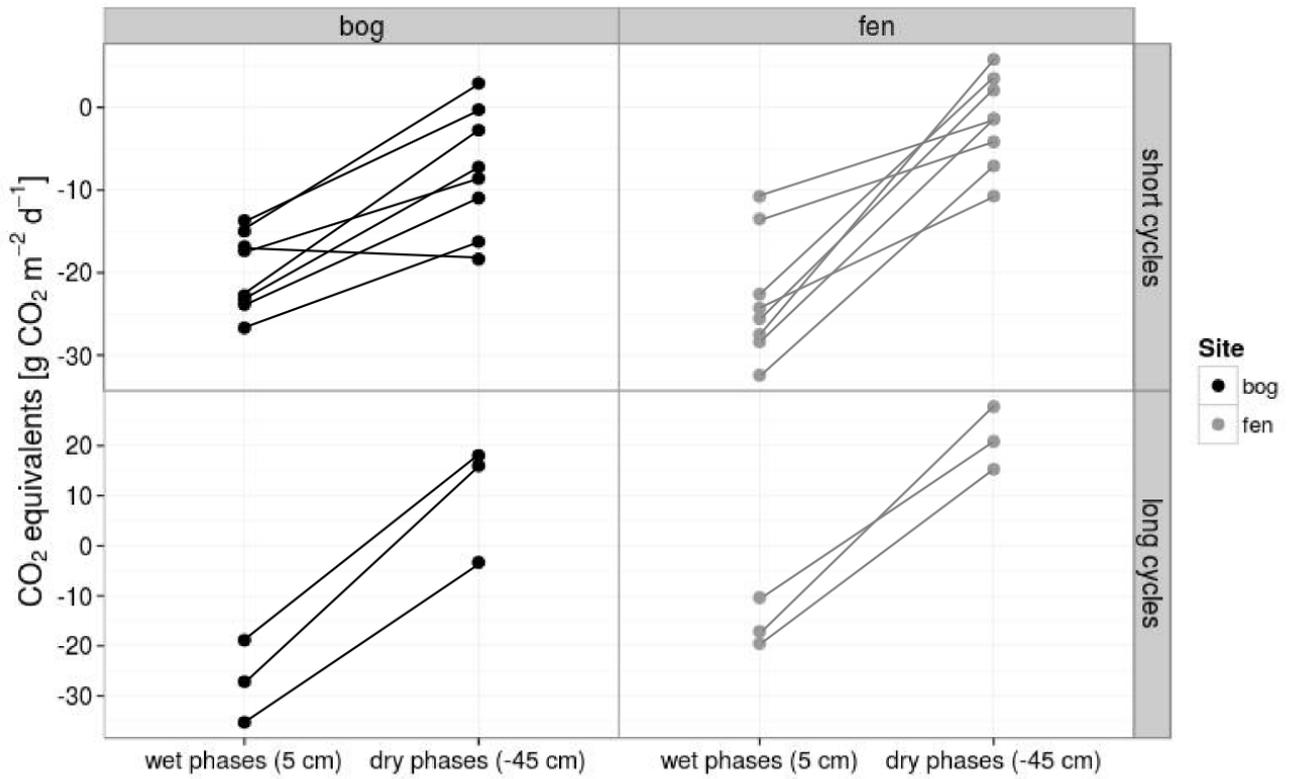


Fig. 4-12: Shift in GHG balance from wet to subsequent dry phase in bog (left) and fen (right) grassland at dynamic water table in short cycles (top) and long cycles (bottom). The first wet-dry phase was excluded due to differences in vegetation development.

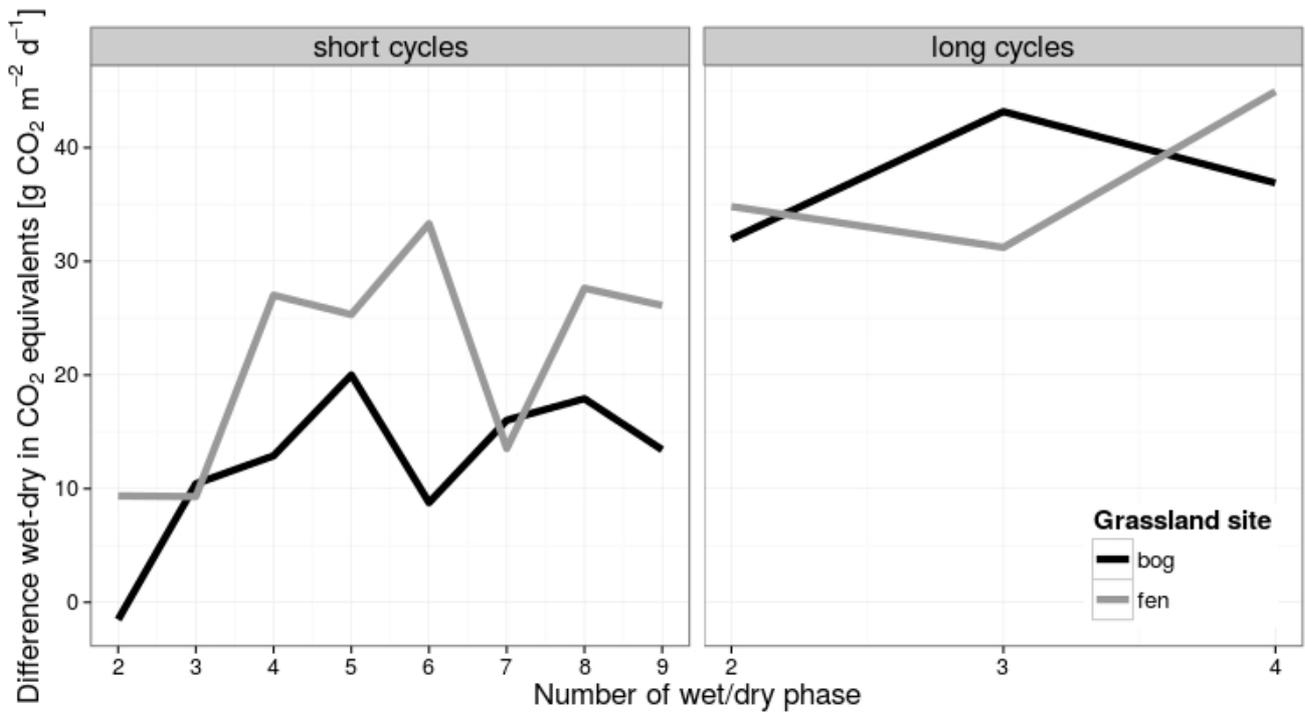


## Appendix

App-Tab. 4-1: Biomass in bog and fen grassland in individual mesocosms at incubation end separated in the four fractions as presented in Fig. 4-3 (green leaves, brown leaves, algae present in the inundation tank and other dead matter) for both water table regimes (short and long cycles)

<b>Biomass [kg dry weight m<sup>-2</sup>]</b>				
dynamic water table change in	short cycles		long cycles	
	<b>bog</b>	<b>fen</b>	<b>bog</b>	<b>fen</b>
green leaves	0.35	0.22	0.12	0.10
	0.40	0.17	0.37	0.09
	0.16	0.29	0.29	0.23
brown leaves	0.60	0.27	0.50	0.08
	0.71	0.26	0.74	0.16
	0.48	0.64	1.19	0.14
algae	0	0	0.07	0
	0	0	0.02	0
	0	0	0.01	0
other dead matter	0.06	0	0.21	0.06
	0.03	0.02	0.15	0.08
	0.15	0	0.27	0

App-Fig. 4-1: Difference between wet and subsequent dry phases in CO<sub>2</sub> equivalents at dynamic water table shifts in short (left) and long (right) cycles of bog (black) and fen (grey) grassland mesocosms. The first wet-dry phase was excluded to to differences in vegetation development.



## Chapter 5: Comprehensive discussion and conclusions

The first part of this chapter comprises a summary of the most important results from the incubation experiments (summary of Chapter 2, 3 and 4) and is structured based on the research questions of the three publications complemented with information in relation to our own expectations and knowledge from the literature.

In the second part, the implications for GHG mitigation by rewetting measures are given based on the presented results.

In the last part, we give general recommendations for practical rewetting.

### 5.1 Summary of results

#### 5.1.1. The effect of the organic substrate for CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emissions

*Research questions:*

*What are the possible sources of the high CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emissions on-site after rewetting? How do organic substrates from different depths or including/excluding fresh plant litter contribute to anaerobic GHG production? We hypothesize that the fresh plant litter can account for a large proportion of the increased CH<sub>4</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub> emissions.*

- The hypothesis was confirmed by our incubations. The presence of fresh organic matter determines anaerobic GHG production – and not the quality of the bulk peat substrate itself.
- The newly-formed organic sediment layer has an extremely high potential for CH<sub>4</sub> production. The vegetation growing at the site was very productive and produced a large carbon pool before its dying-off. The main part thereof was presumably transferred to the organic sediment layer. The release of CH<sub>4</sub> could stay high – at least as long as eutrophic and inundated conditions last.
- Pure peat without any fresh plant-derived material seems to be relatively inert. Significant methane emissions cannot be expected from pure peat layers under permanently inundated conditions in the field as long as readily degradable substances are lacking.
- CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> production may occur to some extent when some labile organic matter is available, e.g. from rhizodeposition or fresh litter from plant roots. CH<sub>4</sub> production will start after an extended lag-phase depending on the availability of alternative electron acceptors after rewetting. This available carbon pool is more limited than in the newly formed sediment layer.
- The risk of high CO<sub>2</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emissions after restoration is limited to waterlogged / flooded conditions and the simultaneous presence of readily degradable and energy-rich substrates for microbial decomposition processes (i.e. eutrophic peat, fresh plant litter, or newly formed organic sediments, e.g. from plants that are not adapted to flooding).

*When do conditions favourable for methanogenesis occur?*

- Incubation experiment performed immediately after flooding: Methanogenesis started after the complete depletion of sulfate after a 182-day lag-phase and took place only in the upper peat layer.
- Incubation after 2.5 years of flooding: The substrates for this incubation were under anaerobic conditions in the field for 2.5 years and conditions favourable for methanogenesis were established very quickly.

### **5.1.2. The effect of the water table on GHG fluxes: stepwise rewetting and prolonged flooding**

*Research questions:*

*How does the vegetation react to raising water level and extended flooding (water-intolerant grasses versus water-tolerant sedges)? How does the contribution of autotrophic and heterotrophic respiration change with water table?*

- Under gradual rewetting (from -30 cm to 0 cm) the vegetation reacted with reduced vitality. Flooding – raising the water table from 0 cm to +5 cm – imposed a shock on the vegetation. Sedges generally had a lower productivity but recovered after several weeks of water stress while grasses partially died-off. Permanent flooding led to increased availability of readily degradable matter from recently died-off plants.
- Auto- and heterotrophic respiration were gradually reduced in both grasses and sedges which was to be expected.

*Are there water table thresholds for drastic changes in GHG fluxes? At which water table position are net GHG emissions minimal? How are GHG fluxes affected by extended flooding?*

- We present data on the functional role of the water table position on GHG exchange under controlled environmental conditions – which are still scarce in the literature. We are the first to use peat mesocosms with grassland vegetation typical for German fen management.
- The most favourable water table positions for minimal GHG fluxes range from -10 cm to 0 cm. This finding confirms recommendations for an optimum water table in the literature (e.g. by (Drösler et al. 2008) or (Jungkunst et al. 2008)) and is based on the balance of all three GHGs (CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O).
- Stepwise raising the water table from -30 cm up to 0 cm reduced gross primary production (GPP) and ecosystem respiration (R<sub>eco</sub>) leading to an increased net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake while CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions were still low. Gradual rewetting increased the net GHG uptake by 0.6 (sedges) to 0.8 (grasses) g CO<sub>2</sub>-equivalents m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> per cm water table raise.
- The most drastic change in GHG balance occurred with flooding which caused a significant reduction of GPP and simultaneous increase in R<sub>eco</sub> and CH<sub>4</sub> emissions due to increased substrate availability. The flooding event caused immediate extra GHG emissions of 27 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equivalents m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in grasses and 22 g CO<sub>2</sub>-equivalents m<sup>-2</sup> d<sup>-1</sup> in sedges.

Raising the water table above the peat surface (flooding) has nearly cancelled the positive climatic effect in grasses compared to the driest phase (water table of -30 cm) because the lower net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake was more than compensated by CH<sub>4</sub> emissions in terms of CO<sub>2</sub>-equivalents. In sedges, CH<sub>4</sub> never risked to compensate the net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake – the positive climatic effect was halved after flooding.

- This results confirmed the argument that the positive climate impact of rewetting may be considerably reduced when the soil is completely waterlogged due to increased CH<sub>4</sub> emissions. We showed that a water table above the peat surface (flooding) bore the greatest risk – not only because of increasing CH<sub>4</sub> emissions (as expected) but also because of increased CO<sub>2</sub> loss from respiration.

*What is the effect of aerenchymous plants? Do sedges boost CH<sub>4</sub> emissions under wet conditions due to plant mediated CH<sub>4</sub> transport?*

- Sedges did not boost CH<sub>4</sub> emissions under wet conditions.
- These aerenchymous plants allowed the transport of oxygen into deeper soil horizons and stabilized the redox potential. Redox conditions favourable for CH<sub>4</sub> production occurred ~30 days later, CH<sub>4</sub> production was lower and CH<sub>4</sub> never risked to compensate the net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake in the sedges mesocosms.

### **5.1.3. The effect of the water table on GHG fluxes: alternating wet-dry conditions**

*Research questions:*

*How do grassland vegetation, photosynthesis, respiration, CH<sub>4</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes react to a dynamic change in the water table from wet to dry conditions and vice versa? How do wet respectively dry conditions affect the net GHG balance?*

- The grassland vegetation which has low flooding tolerance adapted well to wetness stress. The bog grassland showed higher biomass production and partially died-off leading to dead organic matter accumulation. The fen grassland exhibited slower growth but lower mortality.
- The capacity to fix CO<sub>2</sub> by photosynthesis (GPP) was unaffected by the dynamic change in water table in both grasslands. This is in agreement with the literature where it has been shown that GPP is rather affected by radiation and not by water level (Lindroth et al. 2007; Leiber-Sauheitl et al. 2014).
- Respiration was two to three times higher under dry conditions and reacted fast to abrupt water table changes. The considerable increase in peat mineralization under drainage was expected.

The reaction of R<sub>eco</sub> to the strong water table fluctuations took place within days in our incubation experiment and has – to our knowledge – not been studied in such temporal resolution in the field.

This immediate  $R_{\text{eco}}$  response to water table change may have a significant effect on the annual  $\text{CO}_2$  balance in peatlands and should be taken into account in gap-filling and interpolation procedures.

- Net ecosystem exchange (NEE) was driven by the water table driven variation in heterotrophic soil respiration.
- $\text{CH}_4$  flux rates were low despite the large amount of dead biomass and warm conditions. We had expected that the re-established water saturated conditions would favour methanogenesis much more strongly.  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  emissions showed no response to changes in water table position.
- With regard to GHG balance, both grasslands acted as GHG sink under wet conditions (+5 cm). Lowering the water table (to -45 cm) turned the grasslands into a GHG source. Intermittent drainage reduced the GHG sink strength (by 12.2 in bog and 21.5 g  $\text{CO}_2$ -equ.  $\text{m}^{-2} \text{d}^{-1}$  in fen when wet phases were relatively short). This reduction in GHG sink strength with draining was higher when wet phases were long (by 37 g  $\text{CO}_2$ -equ.  $\text{m}^{-2} \text{d}^{-1}$  in both grasslands) as more readily degradable organic matter was available for aerobic respiration processes.

*Is the response fully reversible when water table switches back to the original position, and repeatable? Is there a memory effect of previous flooding or drainage events?*

- The response of the redox potential to water table switches was fully reversible and repeatable.
- $\text{CH}_4$  fluxes showed no indication of legacy effects.
- A small legacy effect of past flooding was found for  $\text{CO}_2$ . The dynamic water table change stimulated  $\text{CO}_2$  sources. Respiration rates and net GHG emissions increased from one dry phase to the next which suggests a substrate mobilization effect. However, this stimulation by past wet-dry cycles is small compared to response to the change from wet to dry conditions.

*What length of interim dry periods is needed to effectively reduce  $\text{CH}_4$  emissions?*

- Intermittent flooding as low- $\text{CH}_4$ -emission-strategy – as done in paddy rice fields – has proven to be successfully applied in peatlands.
- Intermittent drainage of peat grasslands led to a renewal of the electron acceptor capacity. The oxidative status of the peat soils was recovered within one week of dry conditions.
- Wet conditions had to occur for up to 20 days until conditions in the topsoil of the peat were favourable for methanogenesis.

*Do wet-dry cycles foster  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  emissions?*

- Alternating wet-dry conditions did not increase the risk of high  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  emissions in the peat grasslands investigated. This finding is in contrast to our expectations and to the literature

where a fluctuating water table is generally considered to increase N<sub>2</sub>O emissions. The dominant mineral nitrogen form in these organic soils was ammonium with low concentrations – this suggests that the determinant factor for the low N<sub>2</sub>O emission potential was substrate availability.

*Can alternating water tables work as low-GHG management strategies in peat grasslands?*

- With regard to low CH<sub>4</sub> emissions: yes. Intermittent dry periods of one week will prevent high CH<sub>4</sub> emissions as they restore the oxidative status in the peat.
- Lowering the water table bears the risk for increased CO<sub>2</sub> emissions through heterotrophic respiration which was shown to be 2 to 3-fold higher under drained conditions. Therefore, intermittent dry phases should be kept as short as possible. This risk is higher with higher availability of readily degradable organic matter from recently died-off vegetation.
- In order to balance between CH<sub>4</sub> avoidance and increased CO<sub>2</sub> release, an intermittent period of one week under dry conditions is long enough to reset the soil conditions with minimal memory effects of previous water table conditions.

## **5.2. Implications for GHG mitigation by rewetting**

The incubation experiments of this PhD thesis aimed to investigate some of the processes considered most important and selected factors that determine GHG fluxes – that means we investigated a few aspects of the whole complex picture. We manipulated key factors controlling GHG fluxes under controlled environmental conditions – a direct comparison of our results with results from field measurements should, therefore, be handled with caution. Furthermore, the experiments were performed with mesocosms from grassland sites – which represent the most wide-spread land-use on organic soils in Germany – but the resulting implications may not necessarily be applied to other peatland sites with different properties or differing land-use. Therefore, the recommendations given below should be seen within the limits set by laboratory experiments and do not claim to reflect all the complex processes involved in GHG production and emission from peatlands.

Peatland management aiming to reduce GHG emissions should consider the following recommendations derived from our findings. The recommendations are given in italic type, the text below presents further explanations and information derived from our experiments.

*Avoid deeply drained conditions because of high CO<sub>2</sub> losses.*

- When the peat is drained, CO<sub>2</sub> release by heterotrophic respiration increases immediately and considerably. CO<sub>2</sub> loss under drained conditions was two to three fold compared to wet conditions.
- Every wet day saves soil carbon, in particular during the vegetation period when biological activity is high. Therefore, intermittent dry phases – aiming to avoid high CH<sub>4</sub> emissions – should be kept as short as possible.
- This confirms in general our expectations and general knowledge in the literature and

emphasizes the importance of carbon loss at a low water table.

*Conditions favourable for methanogenesis only occur after a lag-phase. A short intermittent dry period prevents high CH<sub>4</sub> production.*

- Mitigation strategies for rice paddies can also be applied in peatlands. This has not been investigated so far.
- After the water table has been raised to re-create water saturated conditions, it takes weeks to establish conditions favourable for methanogenesis. This lag-phase depends on how fast alternative electron acceptors are depleted and cannot be generalized as it strongly depends on on-site conditions. Already a short period under dry conditions rapidly restores the oxidative status in the peat soil and re-creates the lag-phase. One week of dry conditions prevents high CH<sub>4</sub> emissions for weeks.

*Aerenchymous plants retard methanogenesis by stabilizing the redox potential.*

- Based on our findings, we could not confirm an increase of CH<sub>4</sub> release via plant mediated transport in aerenchymous plants.
- Aerenchymous plants stabilized the redox potential by allowing O<sub>2</sub> transport into deeper peat horizons and, consequently, retarded the onset of CH<sub>4</sub> production and lowered CH<sub>4</sub> emissions.
- There is not necessarily an increase in CH<sub>4</sub> emissions when wetness-adapted sedges replace a non-adapted grassland vegetation after rewetting. This finding is in contrast to what we would expect based on the information given in the literature on plants with aerenchymous tissue.

*A water table slightly below the surface minimizes GHG emissions.*

- Ideally, the water table is kept slightly below the soil surface (at -10 cm to 0 cm depth), which allows grassland vegetation to grow well and simultaneously limits heterotrophic respiration. In the shallow aerobic layer near the peat surface CH<sub>4</sub> oxidation may take place. This confirms recommendations of an optimum water table position given in the literature so far.
- Flooding, however, imposes a shock on vegetation, even on wetness-adapted sedges. Lowered GPP during a transition phase or higher mortality reduces net CO<sub>2</sub> uptake. Flooding extended over several weeks also increases CH<sub>4</sub> emissions.

*There was no risk of high N<sub>2</sub>O emissions in our experiments.*

- Alternating wet-dry phases did not foster N<sub>2</sub>O emissions in our experiments in contrast to our expectations.
- N<sub>2</sub>O may be important in agriculturally used peatlands due to fertilization. On our sites, low mineral nitrogen and very low nitrate concentrations were present. The results may not

necessarily be generalized. Therefore, we recommend to check soil properties for risks of high N<sub>2</sub>O emissions.

*Rewetting measures should aim to support plant vitality and to avoid partial or complete dying-off of the vegetation.*

- In general, climate change mitigation aims to preserve respectively to re-establish peat formation (i.e. preserving the carbon reservoir). However, the living above-ground vegetation plays an essential role in GHG production as it provides readily degradable organic matter as substrates for microbial decomposition processes – while the old peat substrate is of minor relevance.
- Abruptly raising the water table will naturally affect plant vitality. When rewetting produces permanently inundated conditions on eutrophic fen grasslands, plant species not adapted to this wet conditions presumably will die-off provoking increasing GHG emissions by providing the substrates.
- Rewetting should, therefore, be accompanied by support for a vegetation transition towards wetness-adapted species as mal-adaptation leads to reduced GPP and provides substrate for CH<sub>4</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub> production from died-off plant parts.
- Gross primary production (i.e. the capacity to fix CO<sub>2</sub>) is an essential part of the GHG balance. Investigating net GHG emissions without considering the uptake of CO<sub>2</sub> via plants is incomplete and unsuitable for conclusions on the whole GHG balance of a peatland site.

### **5.3. Recommendations for practical rewetting**

- Rewetting aiming to low-GHG-emissions should at best re-establish near-natural conditions with respect to the water table – i.e. a water table slightly below the peat surface – and a vegetation adapted to this water saturated conditions.
- Avoid permanent or extended phases of flooding as this severely effects vegetation vitality and produces GHG emissions comparable to grasslands drained to -30 cm depth. This transitional phase should be overcome as quickly as possible. Allow a vegetation transition towards wetness-adapted species.
- In situations where rewetting has led to extended flooding during the vegetation period with a risk of high CH<sub>4</sub> emissions, allow intermittent dry periods of one week to keep CH<sub>4</sub> emissions low.
- Check mineral nitrogen concentrations in the peat to identify potential risks of high N<sub>2</sub>O emissions.

## 5.4. Bibliography

- Drösler M, Freibauer A, Christensen TR, Friborg T (2008) Observations and status of peatland greenhouse gas emissions in Europe. In: Dolman AJ, Valentini R, Freibauer A (eds) *The continental-scale greenhouse gas balance of Europe*. Springer Verlag, pp 243–262
- Jungkunst HF, Flessa H, Scherber C, Fiedler S (2008) Groundwater level controls CO<sub>2</sub>, N<sub>2</sub>O and CH<sub>4</sub> fluxes of three different hydromorphic soil types of a temperate forest ecosystem. *Soil Biology and Biochemistry* 40:2047–2054. doi: 10.1016/j.soilbio.2008.04.015
- Leiber-Sauheitl K, Fuß R, Voigt C, Freibauer A (2014) High CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes from grassland on histic Gleysol along soil carbon and drainage gradients. *Biogeosciences* 11:749–761. doi: 10.5194/bg-11-749-2014
- Lindroth A, Lund M, Nilsson M, et al. (2007) Environmental controls on the CO<sub>2</sub> exchange in north European mires. *Tellus B* 59:812–825.

## Glossary

acrotelm	zone above the mean water table within a peat profile with aerobic conditions
aerenchymous plants	plant species possessing tissues (e.g. in their stems, leaves, rhizomes) which enable internal air circulation. These plants allow the exchange of gases between the rhizosphere and the atmosphere and are also called „shunt species“. They provide a short-cut (shunt) for gas transport which is of particular importance with respect to CH <sub>4</sub> emissions.
autotrophic respiration	is the production and of CO <sub>2</sub> by autotrophic organisms (e.g. plants and algae; being able to fix carbon by photosynthesis)
bog	is a peatland receiving its water mostly by precipitation and which is, consequently, generally nutrient-poor and acidic (ombrotrophic)
bulk density	is peat mass per unit volume (given in g m <sup>-3</sup> ) and inversely related to the porosity. The bulk density of peat varies depending on its botanical composition and degree of peat decomposition.
carbon sequestration	long-term storage of CO <sub>2</sub> , e.g. by peat formation
catotelm	zone below the mean water table with anaerobic conditions
CH <sub>4</sub>	methane. This non-toxic, but extremely flammable gas is naturally produced by microbial processes (see methanogenesis). Methane is a major greenhouse gas with a global warming potential 25 times higher than carbon dioxide over a 100-year period.
climate impact	Greenhouse gases emitted into the atmosphere absorb infrared radiation radiated from the Earth's surface and re-radiate this energy causing an increase in global temperature („greenhouse effect“). The GWP methodology is used to assess and compare the climate impact of different peatlands.
CO <sub>2</sub>	carbon dioxide; is a naturally-occurring chemical compound and part of the carbon cycle (carbon fixation via photosynthesis, carbon dioxide release by respiration). Carbon dioxide is an important greenhouse gas and the increase of carbon dioxide concentration in the atmosphere has led to global warming.
CO <sub>2</sub> equivalent	indicates the radiative forcing of a greenhouse gas emission rate over a defined timescale (100 years) relative to carbon dioxide. It is calculated based on the gas flux rate and the GWP of the gas.

---

denitrification	is the reduction of nitrate or nitrite to molecular nitrogen by heterotrophic facultative anaerobic bacteria. $N_2O$ is produced within this process as intermediate product.
DOC	dissolved organic carbon, i.e. organic carbon which remains in solution after filtration (typically with 0.45 $\mu m$ filter)
drainage	is the direct human-induced lowering of the soil water table
ecosystem respiration	see under $R_{eco}$
fen	is a peatland receiving its water by rainfall and from surface water, having a higher nutrient level and lower acidity (minerotrophic)
flooding	raising the water table above the surface
gas chromatography	analytical method to separate and qualitatively and quantitatively analyse the compounds in a sample. In this PhD, this method was used to determine gas concentrations in air samples.
GHG	greenhouse gases. The abbreviation stands for the three key greenhouse gases carbon dioxide ( $CO_2$ ), methane ( $CH_4$ ) and nitrous oxide ( $N_2O$ ).
GHG balance	is the sum of the three key GHGs ( $CO_2$ , $CH_4$ and $N_2O$ ) in terms of $CO_2$ equivalents
GHG flux	rate of gas flow emitted from a defined area and over a certain amount of time. All GHG fluxes in this PhD thesis are considered relative to the compartment „atmosphere“, i.e. fluxes from the soil to the atmosphere are positive – increasing the atmospheric concentration – and fluxes from the atmosphere into the soil/peat are negative – decreasing the atmospheric concentration.
GPP	gross primary production – uptake and fixation of $CO_2$ by photosynthesis in plants
GWP	global warming potential, a measure of the radiative forcing of a gas relative to $CO_2$ . The GWP is calculated over a specific time interval, e.g. 20, 100 or 500 years. The GWP methodology within the <i>Kyoto Protocol</i> uses the 100-year horizon.
heterotrophic respiration	is the production of $CO_2$ by heterotrophic organisms (e.g. animals, fungi, heterotrophic bacteria; which do not have the ability to fix carbon)
IPCC	the <i>Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change</i> , a scientific intergovernmental body under the auspices of the United Nations which produces reports supporting the UNFCCC

linear mixed effects model	<p>is a statistical model containing fixed and random effects and modelling both effects as having a linear form. Fixed effects are identical for all groups in a population while random effects are allowed to differ from group to group.</p> <p>Mixed effects models are used to describe relationships between a response variable and some covariates in data that are grouped according to one or more classification factors (e.g. repeated measures data, etc. ).</p> <p>In a linear mixed effects model, the response variable is contributed to by additive fixed and random effects as well as an error term:</p> $y_{ij} = \beta_1 x_{1ij} + \beta_2 x_{2ij} \dots \beta_n x_{nij} + b_{i1} z_{1ij} + b_{i2} z_{2ij} \dots b_{in} z_{nij} + \varepsilon_{ij}$ <p>where</p> <p><math>y_{ij}</math> is the value of the response variable for a particular <math>ij</math> case,</p> <p><math>\beta_1 \dots \beta_n</math> are the fixed effect coefficients (like regression coefficients) which are identical for all groups,</p> <p><math>x_{1ij} \dots x_{nij}</math> are the fixed effect variables (predictors) for observation <math>j</math> in group <math>i</math> (the first regressor is usually for the constant, <math>x_{1ij} = 1</math>).</p> <p><math>b_{i1} \dots b_{in}</math> are the random effect coefficients for group <math>i</math>, assumed to be multivariately normally distributed and vary by group.</p> <p><math>z_{1ij} \dots z_{nij}</math> are the random effect variables (predictors), and</p> <p><math>\varepsilon_{ij}</math> is the error for case <math>j</math> in group <math>i</math>. The errors for group <math>i</math> are assumed to be multivariately normally distributed.</p>
LULUCF	land use, land-use change and forestry (according to EU decision 529/2013/EU)
mesocosm	peat columns including vegetation cut out from selected peatland sites used for incubation experiments in the climate chamber. The mesocosms were incubated under environmental conditions similar to field conditions and subjected to water table manipulation (see Chapter 3 and 4 of this PhD thesis).
methane oxidation	is the utilization of methane by microorganisms (methanotrophs) for their metabolism; is taking place in the aerobic zone in the peat profile
methanogenesis	is the production of methane during the (anaerobic) decomposition of organic matter by microorganisms. Methane production only occurs in anaerobic environments.
methanogens	strictly anaerobic microorganisms of the group <i>Archaea</i> producing methane
mineralization	see peat oxidation

---

N <sub>2</sub> O	nitrous oxide. Naturally, this colourless, non-toxic gas is produced in the soil during microbial processes (see nitrification and denitrification). Nitrous oxide is a major greenhouse gas and has – considered over a 100-year period – a global warming potential 298 times higher than carbon dioxide.
NEE	net ecosystem exchange of CO <sub>2</sub> – that it is the balance between gross primary production and ecosystem respiration
nitrification	is the microbial oxidation of ammonia to nitrite and into nitrate where N <sub>2</sub> O may be produced as a side product. It is a strict aerobic process.
organic sediment	is a deposit of organic material that originates from recently died-off plants and water plants and sand deposited at the bottom of the shallow lake which formed after rewetting. This term is used in the context of Publication I (see Chapter 2 of this PhD thesis).
organic soils	are characterized by their (high) organic matter content and a minimum depth of the organic layer. The existing classification systems have different criteria for organic soils.
PAR	photosynthetically active radiation – those part of the (solar) radiation that is used for photosynthesis by photosynthetic organisms (the wavelength from 400 to 700 nm). PAR is quantified as $\mu\text{mol photons m}^{-2}\text{s}^{-1}$ .
peat	is a „soft, porous or compressed, sedentary deposit of which a substantial portion is partly decomposed plant material with high water content in the natural state“.
peat compaction	volume reduction of peat in the aerated zone above the water table. It results from the pressure applied on the peat surface by heavy equipment. Peat compaction lead to an increase in peat bulk density.
peat consolidation	the compression of saturated peat below the water table owing to loss of buoyancy of the top peat, increasing strain on the peat below. Consolidation increases the peat bulk density of the peat.
peat oxidation	decomposition of peat in the aerated zone above the water table (minerlization). Peat oxidation is caused by the breakdown of organic matter and results in carbon loss through the release of gaseous CO <sub>2</sub> to the atmosphere. The bulk density of the peat is not affected by peat oxidation.
peat shrinkage	volume reduction of peat in the aerated zone above the water table. It occurs through contraction of organic fibres when drying. Shrinkage also leads to an increase in the bulk density of the peat.
peatland	is an area with a naturally accumulated peat layer at the surface

---

photoacoustic infrared gas analysis	analytical method to determine the concentration of a gas. The gas to be measured is irradiated by light of a pre-selected wavelength. The gas molecules absorb some of the light energy and convert it into an acoustic signal which is detected by a microphone.
plant mediated gas transport	gas transport via the tissue of aerenchymous plants
$R_{eco}$	ecosystem respiration – which is the sum of autotrophic and heterotrophic respiration in a specific ecosystem
REDD+	<i>Reducing Emissions from Deforestation and Forest Degradation</i> – a mechanism by the UNFCCC for climate mitigation
redox potential	may be used to qualitatively estimate a soil state. As biogeochemical processes in water-saturated soils take place within a defined range of redox potential values, e.g. CH <sub>4</sub> production, we use the redox potential to identify situations where conditions are favourable for CH <sub>4</sub> production (see Chapter 3 and 4 of this PhD thesis).
rewetting	is the deliberate action of raising the water table on drained soils to re-establish water saturated conditions, partially or totally reversing drainage
subsidence	lowering of the surface caused by peat oxidation and physical volume reduction of the peat
UNFCCC	the <i>United Nations Framework Convention on Climate Change</i> – the main international treaty on climate change
water table	is the surface of a body of underground water below which the soil or rocks are permanently saturated with water. The water table separates the groundwater zone (zone of saturation) that lies below it from the zone of aeration that lies above it. The water table fluctuates both with the seasons and from year to year because it is affected by climatic variations and by the amount of precipitation used by vegetation ( <a href="http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary">http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary</a> ).
wetland	is a land with soil inundated or saturated by water. A peatland falls under the definition wetland. A Wetland represents an IPCC land-use category.

## List of Figures

### Chapter 1: Overall introduction

Fig. 1-1	Schematic illustration of a peat profile showing the two determining factors water table and organic matter for microbial production of the greenhouse gases CO <sub>2</sub> , CH <sub>4</sub> and N <sub>2</sub> O.	6
Fig. 1-2	Peatlands in their natural state and under drainage: Direction and relative amount of GHG fluxes (CO <sub>2</sub> , CH <sub>4</sub> and N <sub>2</sub> O) from peat surface	10
Fig. 1-3	Rewetting of peatlands: Direction and relative amount of GHG fluxes (CO <sub>2</sub> , CH <sub>4</sub> and N <sub>2</sub> O) from peat surface.	12

### Chapter 2: Publication I<sup>21</sup>

Fig. 1	CO <sub>2</sub> and CH <sub>4</sub> emissions from the surface for the peat layer incubation and for the organic substrate incubation at constant temperature.	30
Fig. 2	Organic substrate incubation: CO <sub>2</sub> and CH <sub>4</sub> concentrations in the silicone probes over a 53-day period at constant temperature of 15 °C.	31
Fig. 3	Peat layer incubation: Sulfate and iron concentrations in the pore water of the upper, middle and lower peat layer over the 363-day incubation period.	31

### Chapter 3: Publication II

Fig. 3-1	Mesocosm set-up in the climate chamber	59
Fig. 3-2	Diurnal radiation and temperature conditions in the climate chamber and at the sampling site	60
Fig. 3-3	Biomass per area in mesocosms in sedges and grasses at incubation end	61
Fig. 3-4	Redox potential over the course of the experiment in grasses and sedges measured in -5, -10 and -20 cm depth	62
Fig. 3-5	Daily R <sub>eco</sub> , GPP and NEE in grasses and sedges at raising water table positions	63
Fig. 3-6	Estimated CH <sub>4</sub> flux based on the linear mixed-effects model in grasses and sedges at the different water table positions	64
Fig. 3-7	CO <sub>2</sub> equivalents of the three greenhouse gases at different water table positions of grasses and sedges	65

<sup>21</sup> In order to be in line with the numbering of the figures in the already published Publication I the numbering deviates slightly from those in other chapters – leaving out the chapter number in the first place.

	Appendix	
App-Fig. 3-1	Estimated CO <sub>2</sub> flux based on the linear mixed-effects model in grasses and sedges at the different water table positions	66
Chapter 4: Publication III		
Fig. 4-1	Biogeochemical processes in dry and wet peat soil mesocosms as represented by the two water table levels	100
Fig. 4-2	Set-up of mesocosm and attached measurement chamber for gas exchange measurements	101
Fig. 4-3	Mean biomass in bog and fen grassland mesocosms at incubation end	102
Fig. 4-4	Redox potential over the course of the experiment with changing water table in short cycles in bog and fen grasslands measured in -5, -10 and -20 cm depth	103
Fig. 4-5	Redox potential over the course of the experiment with changing water table in long cycles in bog and fen grasslands measured in -5, -10 and -20 cm depth	104
Fig. 4-6	Daily R <sub>eco</sub> , GPP and NEE in bog and fen grassland mesocosms at dynamic water table in short cycles	105
Fig. 4-7	Daily R <sub>eco</sub> , GPP and NEE in bog and fen grassland mesocosms at dynamic water table in long cycles	106
Fig. 4-8	Mean CH <sub>4</sub> flux in bog and fen grassland mesocosms at dynamic water table in short cycles	107
Fig. 4-9	Mean CH <sub>4</sub> flux in bog and fen grassland mesocosms at dynamic water table in long cycles	108
Fig. 4-10	Mean N <sub>2</sub> O flux in bog and fen grassland mesocosms at dynamic water table in short cycles	109
Fig. 4-11	Mean N <sub>2</sub> O flux in bog and fen grassland mesocosms at dynamic water table in long cycles	110
Fig. 4-12	Shift in GHG balance from wet to subsequent dry phase in bog and fen grassland at dynamic water table	111
	Appendix	
App-Fig. 4-1	Difference between wet and subsequent dry phases in CO <sub>2</sub> equivalents at dynamic water table shifts in short and long cycles of bog and fen grassland mesocosms	113

## List of Tables

### Chapter 2: Publication I<sup>22</sup>

Tab. 1	Selected peat characteristics for peat from different horizons, as well as sediment/peat substrates incubated in two experiments sampled from the Zarnekow polder.	27
Tab. 2	Overview of the two incubations performed.	28
Tab. 3	Characterization of pore water chemistry for the peat layer incubation and the organic substrate incubation.	32
Tab. 4	Cumulative CO <sub>2</sub> and CH <sub>4</sub> fluxes over the incubation period, average per day, total C in incubation vessels and C respired during incubation.	33

### Chapter 3: Publication II

Tab. 3-1	Characterization of the sampling sites in the Freisinger Moos: dominant vegetation, management and soil characteristics	57
Tab. 3-2	Relative change in CO <sub>2</sub> fluxes as an effect of plant composition and water table position calculated from predictions derived from linear mixed-effects models for R <sub>eco</sub> , GPP and NEE	58
Appendix		
App-Tab. 3-1	Linear mixed-effects model of R <sub>eco</sub> vs. water table position, plant composition and vegetation development	68
App-Tab. 3-2	Linear mixed-effects model of GPP vs. water table position, plant composition and vegetation development	71
App-Tab. 3-3	Linear mixed-effects model of NEE vs. water table position, plant composition and vegetation development	74
App-Tab. 3-4	Linear mixed-effects model of CH <sub>4</sub> vs. water table position, plant composition and vegetation development	77

### Chapter 4: Publication III

Tab. 4-1	Characterization of the sampling sites in the Ahlen-Falkenberger Moor and Freisinger Moos	99
Appendix		
App-Tab. 4-1	Biomass in bog and fen grassland in individual mesocosms at incubation end separated in the four fractions as presented in Fig. 3	112

<sup>22</sup> In order to be in line with the numbering of the tables in the already published Publication I the numbering deviates slightly from those in other chapters.

# Curriculum vitae

## Persönliche Angaben

Mag.rer.nat. Maria Hahn-Schöfl  
 geboren am 01/04/1973 in Österreich  
 verheiratet, 2 Töchter

## Ausbildung und beruflicher Werdegang

- 01/2007 – 03/2015 **Doktorarbeit**, Max Planck Institut für Biogeochemie, Jena (DL), Abteilung Biogeochemische Prozesse, zum Thema „Water table and organic substrate as triggers of greenhouse gas emissions from rewetted peatlands“  
 Betreuung durch: Prof. Dr. Jürgen Böttcher (Leibniz Universität, Institut für Bodenkunde, Hannover (DL))  
 fachliche Betreuung durch: Dr. Annette Freibauer (Thünen Institut für Agrarklimaschutz, Braunschweig (DL))  
 Die Arbeit erfolgte ab 10/2009 in Teilzeit und wurde in folgenden Perioden aufgrund von Elternzeit unterbrochen: 01/2011 – 01/2012 und 09/2008 – 09/2009.
- 09/2006 – 12/2006 **wissenschaftliche Mitarbeiterin**, Umweltbundesamt, Dessau (DL), Fachgebiet IV 2.4 - Ökotoxikologische Bewertung von Stoffen
- 06/2000 – 04/2006 **Fachreferentin**, Umweltbundesamt Wien (AT), Abteilung Chemikalien - Fachbereich Ökotoxikologische Bewertung von Chemikalien
- 03/1997 – 05/1999 **Diplomarbeit**, Universität Wien (AT), zum Thema „Spurengas-Emissionen aus Buchenwald-Ökosystemen im Wienerwald“  
 Betreuung durch: Dr. Sophie Zechmeister-Boltenstern (Forstliche Bundesversuchsanstalt, Institut für Waldökologie, Wien (AT))
- 09/1996 – 02/1997 **Auslandssemester**, Université Paul Sabatier, Toulouse (FR), Schwerpunkte: Ökotoxikologie und Tropenökologie
- 10/1992 – 06/1999 **Diplomstudium**, Universität Wien (AT), Studienrichtung Biologie, Studienzweig Ökologie
- 06/1992 **Matura**, Höhere Lehranstalt für wirtschaftliche Berufe, Zwettl (AT)